

1560 9272



T H E
L I F E
A N D
A D V E N T U R E S
O F

JOE THOMPSON.

A
NARRATIVE founded on FACT.

WRITTEN BY HIMSELF.

*To wake the Soul, by tender Strokes of Art ;
To raise the Genius, and to mend the Heart ;
To make Mankind in conscious Virtue bold,
Live o'er each Scene, and be what they behold :
For this ———*

POPE.

V O L. II.

D U B L I N :

Printed for T. ARMITAGE, Bookseller,
in Crampton-Court. M,DCC,LXXI.

THE

AND

ADVENTURES

OF THOMPSON

NAVIGATION

IN THE

OF THE



VOL. I

THE

OF THE

OF THE

CONTENTS.

C H A P. XXXIII.

MR. Diaper and his Family retire into the Country.—Thompson returns from thence, and takes a Lodging in London.—Almost constantly at Mr. Bellair's.—The Manner of employing this leisure Time.—Hears from Archer.—Contracts an Aversion for Women—Visits a suburban Club with Mr. Deacon.—Account of that absurd Set of People and their Conversation—Receives a Letter from Mr. Diaper, dated Lisbon.

Page 1

C H A P. XXXIV.

He, with Prig, is attacked by Footpads.—They take three of them.—One of them proves to be Packer.—Discourse between Thompson and him.—He is committed to Newgate, tried at the Old Bailey, condemned, and executed.—Observations arising from his Behaviour in his last Moments.—Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley arrive in Town.

10

C H A P. XXXV.

He meets Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley.—He apologizes for his Friend—Receives an Account of Sir Walter's Alteration of Temper, and the Difference between him and the Squire.—

VOL. II.

A

They

C O N T E N T S.

They bring him a Letter from Fidele.——Its remarkable Contents.——His Rage after perusing it.——They return into Yorkshire.——Prig sets out upon a Journey.——He grows more and more melancholy. Page 16

C H A P. XXXVI.

He takes to Drinking.——Mr. Deacon dies, by which he is involved in a sad Scrape.——He is arrested.——Carried to the Spunging-house.——His Treatment there.——Removes himself, by Habeas Corpus, to the Fleet.——His Motives for doing so. 24

C H A P. XXXVII.

He is painted in the Coffee-room.——Adjourns to the Fleet-cellar.——Humourous Appearance of the Guests there.——Hears a Character of Speculist.——Enters his new Apartment.——Description of it.——Character of the Place in general.——Divers Reflections.——He joins with an Ordinary. 32

C H A P. XXXVIII.

Gets another Apartment.——Meets Speculist.——Becomes extravagant.——Loses Money at Fives.——Is quarrelled with at the Dragon-Club.——Fights his Antagonist upon the Bare, and beats him.——Is in great Distress.——Makes away with his Clothes by Degrees. 39

C H A P. XXXIX.

A Digression.——Speculist taken ill.——His Behaviour on his Death-bed.——Dies.——An unexpected Visitor arrives, and enquires for Thompson.——The affecting Interview between them.——His Father and Diaper come to him.——He is set at Liberty.——Takes Leave of his Fellow-prisoners. 44

C H A P. XL

The History of Sir William Failer, Bart. 56

C H A P.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XLI.

He persists in his Design of going Abroad.——Prig arrives, whom he consults.——Luckily thinks of applying to Mr. Goodwill.——That Gentleman arrives at Mr. Diaper's.——He persuades Mr. Thompson to let his Son go to the East-Indies.——Mr. Goodwill procures him to be sent as a Factor to Fort St. George.——He takes Leave of the Directors.——Is nobly fitted out for the Voyage.

Page 65

CHAP. XLII.

Mr. Thompson gives his Son a Paper of Instructions, for the Management of his Conduct.——Mr. Diaper resolves, with his Spouse, to spend some Time in Yorkshire——Prig employed advantageously by Mr. Goodwill.——They accompany Thompson to Dover.——Their tender Parting.——He embarks on board the Hastings, Capt. Social, Commander——They weigh Anchor, and set Sail on their Voyage to the East-Indies.

73

CHAP. XLIII.

He opens his Mother's Letter, and finds a Picture of his Louisa.——They meet with a terrible Storm.——Discover a Vessel on Fire, which blows up.——They receive the Crew of her on Board.——Thompson discovers an old Friend amongst them.——Their Account of the Misfortune.

81

CHAP. XLIV.

The Adventures of Mr. William Prim.

91

CHAP. XLV.

He satisfies Prim in his Enquiries——The mutual Civilities that pass between them.——They touch at one of the Cape de Verde Islands.——A Vessel puts in there also, bound to Glasgow in Scotland.——Proves to be freighted by Prim's Overseer.——

A 2

He

CONTENTS.

He goes on Board her. Entertains the Gentlemen from the Hastings. They take Leave of each other, and proceed on their respective Voyages. Page 107

CHAP. XLVI.

They are in Danger from a Water Spout.—He is saved from a great Peril by his Servant.—Capt. Social dies.—They are driven by a Storm to the Southward.—In great Distress.—They meet with Land.—Bear up to the Cape of Good Hope.—Refit their Vessel, and proceed on their Voyage. 111

CHAP. XLVII.

They are obliged to put into the Island of Java.—Sail from thence, and arrive at Fort. St. George, on the Coast of Coromandel.—He is well received.—Falls ill.—Recovers, and applies himself assiduously to the Duties of his Profession.—Receives Letters from England. 115

CHAP. XLVIII.

He sends Truman on a Trading Voyage.—Receives great Advantages from it.—Sends him to the Diamond Mines.—Is ordered on the Company's Affairs to Surat.—Executes his Commission with Success.—Is ordered up to Hughley.—In great Danger and Distress on the Island of Sagar.—Providentially relieved.—Returns to Fort. St. George. 119

CHAP. XLIX.

They receive certain Advices from Truman, who desires to be recalled.—He arrives with great Gains from the Mines.—Gives his Master a very valuable Stone.—Method he takes to conceal it.—He receives more Letters from England.—Their Contents.—Writes to Mr. Goodwill for a particular Reason. 125

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. L.

He has farther good Fortune.—Observes the settled Melancholy of Mr. Saris.—Endeavours to sooth his Disquiet.—Discovers somewhat of the Cause of his Affliction.—He induces him to relate his unhappy Story.

Page 131

CHAP. LI.

He receives Leave to return to England.—Some Strictures on Government.—Finds Mr. Saris at Liberty to go also.—They send Truman away with the greatest Part of their Effects.—Take Leave of their Friends.—Arrive at Battavia—Embark in a Dutch East-India Ship for Europe—Touch at the Cape of Good-Hope.

147

CHAP. LII.

His agreeable Surprize in meeting, unexpectedly, a dear and valuable Friend.—They relate to each other their Adventures.—Mr. Diaper's Account of an unhappy Shipwreck and Escape.—The Ships sail in Concert.—Are separated by a violent Storm.

153

CHAP. LIII.

They put into Madeira.—An extraordinary Adventure.—He saves an old Friend from a Gang of Bravoes.—They are wounded in the Conflict.—Their mutual Joy at the Sight of each other.—Mr. Archer's Account of the Accident.—He embarks with Captain Beeckman.—They arrive at Amsterdam.

172

CHAP. LIV.

Mr. Saris departs for Ireland.—Archer takes Leave of Thompson, and embarks for Oporto.—He disposes of his Diamond to great Advantage.—Visits Rotterdam, and other Places.—Embarks

in

CONTENTS.

*in the Salisbury, Mac-Kenzie, for London.—
They are taken by the French.* Page 179

C H A P. LV.

He sets out for Paris.—He relieves an English Officer in Distress.—Finds him to be an old Friend.—They satisfy one another in the Relation of their Adventures.—They visit Versailles.—The Officer falls in Love with a Lady they meet in the Gardens. 182

C H A P. LVI.

Sharpley makes great Progress in his Amour.—Recommends a Page to Thompson, at the Request of Serena.—He sets out for the Marquis de Houdaincourt's Seat in Normandy.—They are attacked by Banditti.—His Life saved by his Page.—The Story of the Marquis, and the beautiful Marguerite d'Aulnay.—They release her from her Confinement.—She is married to the Marquis. 195

C H A P. LVII.

They return to Paris.—A Proposal of Marriage is made to him.—Estampe's Behaviour thereon.—He asks him a particular Favour.—Is denied after importuning his Master to grant it.—A terrible Fire at the House of Du Plessis.—Goes to Serena's at her Desire.—Sees Estampe's Sister.—A most affecting Discovery.—Great Joy of Sharpley, and the Family. 205

C H A P. LVIII.

The Adventures of Miss LOUISA RICH. 217

C H A P. LIX.

They settle their Affairs in France.—Madam Rich disposes of her House and Goods.—They stay some Time in Paris.—Meet with an Object of Charity.—Thompson relieves him, notwithstanding a former Piece of ill Usage.—They take

C O N T E N T S.

take Leave of their Friends.—Set out with Passports for Flanders.—Arrive at Williamstadt.—Embark for England.—Land at Harwich.

Page 239

C H A P. LX.

Is accosted by an Acquaintance.—Makes him an handsome Present.—They set out for London.—Are known at Colchester.—By whom discovered.—They arrive in London.—Send for Mr. Prig.—Tender Scene between Thompson and Miss Rich.

244

C H A P. LXI.

He goes down to Mr. Diaper's.—Joy on seeing him.—Carries them to see his Louisa.—Receives Letters from Mr. Saris.—Generosity of that Gentleman.—Mr. Goodwill's excessive Kindness.—Visits Mr. Prim.—He finishes the Settlement of his Affairs.—They set out for Yorkshire.

253

C H A P. LXII.

Arrive at Mr. Bellair's.—Only Thompson and Sharpley set out for Mr. Thompson's with Truman.—They arrive there.—Joyous Emotions of his Father and Mother.—They wait on Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley.—Visit their Friends.—Receive a Message from Sir Walter Rich.—Visit him.—What passes upon it.

261

C H A P. LXIII.

They return to Mr. Bellair's.—All set out for Mr. Thompson's.—Arrive there.—How they are disposed of.—He makes a Proposal to Sir Walter.—Sir Walter consents to it.—Fidele introduced to her Lady.—Truman falls in Love.—Makes a Request to Thompson. He grants his Desire, and makes Louisa an Advocate for him.
—Fidele

CONTENTS.

—Fidele grants *his* Suit, and obtains Sir Walter's Leave to marry him. Page 267

CHAP. LXIV.

Mr. Archer the younger arrives in Yorkshire.—
Another Visitor calls upon them.—The four amiable Pair are married.—Sir Walter's Surprise and Joy in discovering his Daughter.—He pays her Fortune and makes over an Estate to them.—Their Guests depart.—Happiness that succeeds Thompson's Marriage.—Conclusion. 272

THE

THE
L I F E
AND
ADVENTURES
OF
JOE THOMPSON.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Mr. Diaper and his Family retire into the Country. —Thompson returns from thence, and takes a Lodging in London.—Almost constantly at Mr. Bellair's.—The Manner of employing this leisure Time.—Hears from Archer.—Contracts an Aversion for Women—Visits a suburban Club with Mr. Deacon.—Account of that absurd Set of People, and their Conversation—Receives a Letter from Mr. Diaper, dated Lisbon.

SOON after I came to London, Mr. Diaper, having settled all his Affairs, set out for his Country-house, where he proposed to spend the Remainder of his Days, and where I could not be excused from accompanying him. From thence I wrote to my Father an Account of my present Situation, and prayed his Directions how

to dispose of my self; at the same Time giving him an Hint, that I should be glad to enter into another Employ than that I had been engaged in, and, if he consented to it, had much rather follow the Example of my Friend, and spend two or three Years Abroad, which would in all Probability conduce to wear off the melancholy Gloom that oppressed my Mind. The Solitude I indulged in this Recess, tho' at first it humoured my Disposition, and gave a Scope to my perpetual Ideas of my lovely, lost *Louisa*, and my absent Friend and Partner in Affliction, yet it soon grew dangerous for me to stay there longer, for Fear of entirely unhinging myself for the Pursuits of Life, which were now become necessary to me; and therefore I took Leave of my worthy Master and Mistress, who made me promise to see them every Week or Fortnight to console them for the Loss of their Son, and returned to *London*, where I took an Apartment in *Red-Lion Street, Holborn*, till I should otherwise dispose of myself. I almost every Day paid a Visit at Mr. *Bellair's*, which was now the only Comfort I received, and was much edified by the Company of that worthy Family: Miss *Suke* lived quite reclusive; and seldom would see any Company but me, and then her Conversation ran wholly upon her dear *Diaper*, whose Health we were continually drinking. These amiable Persons so sincerely sympathised with me in the Loss of my *Louisa*, that my Melancholy was always dispelled in some Measure by their Society; but, in a few Weeks, I lost even that Consolation, by their Departure into the Country, where they would fain have had me bear them Company. Now my only Relief lay in the Conversation of *Prig* and Mr. *Deacon*, who entered into all my Concerns, and behaved in the kindest Manner, and
once

once a Week I generally went over to see Mr. and Mrs. *Diaper*. I employed myself sometimes in writing to my Friend, Mr. *Goodwill*, his Spouse, and poor *Fidele*, who were all under great Concern at my Loss; but *Fidele* was quite inconsolable, and had taken on so much at the Death of her Mistress, that they feared she would fling herself into a Consumption. I wrote her Word, that I would for ever take Care of her, and desired Mr. *Goodwill* to let her have whatever Money she wanted, which I would repay him again. She frequently went over to see my Mother, with whom also Mrs. *Goodwill* had commenced an Acquaintance. I received a Letter from *Archer* about this Time, informing me, that he was become a Dealer himself, and went on with great Success. As to poor *Sharpley*, I had heard nothing from him a considerable Time, nor knew in what Part of the World he at present was. My Father wrote me Word, that I might stay where I was, and take a little Pleasure, till he came up to *London*, to talk with and see me settled, which he proposed to do in about three Months. In the Intervals of my other Avocations, I endeavoured to make myself Master of several Branches of Learning, I had not touched on before, and, merely by Way of Amusement, went thro' the Study of Navigation, which yielded me great Pleasure. Still the Image of my *Louisa* remained before my Eyes, and I every now and then fell into the most cruel Despondency, and called aloud for Death to relieve me from my Torments. I found it so dangerous to be alone, that I encouraged my Friend *Prig*, to call upon me as often as he had an Inclination, and forced myself to partake of all the Diversions and Amusements he proposed; but thoroughly conceived an Aversion for the Company of Wo-

men, which at first was inspired by a certain Delicacy of never taking any Delight in the Sex since my *Louisa's* Death, which was a Resolution I so constantly supported, that at length I even grew morose and unmannerly, and would abruptly leave any Company upon a Lady's Entrance. Mr. *Deacon*, tho' an excellent Man, had one prevailing Foible; he loved his Bottle, and had a Club for every Night, where he often importuned me to accompany him, under the Notion of keeping up good Company and Fellowship. I was one Evening persuaded to go with him to one of those Meetings, which gave me such an Idea of the Folly and Absurdity of spending Time in a promiscuous Company, of that *while away Strain*, that I can't help drawing the Picture of it, not doubting, but it is a Pattern of most others in this *Metropolis*. At our Entrance, we were saluted by three or four Persons, to whom Mr. *Deacon* presented me, and excused his breaking in upon the Rules of the Company, by bringing a Stranger without Leave; we then seated ourselves, and a profound Silence ensued of near twenty Minutes, which was interrupted by Mr. *Shuttle*, a Weaver, who observed, that it was the finest Day we had had for a Fortnight past, which he was very glad of, as the next Day he was to go to a Parish Feast at *Barnet*. Mr. *Burnish*, a Brazier, replied, that he had been invited to go there too, but that Mr. *Tunbely*, the Church-Warden, had never had a Goose at any one of his Feasts, which was a Thing he greatly loved, and could not imagine he had any Aversion to it himself; for which Reason, he was sure it was always omitted as an Affront to him. Mr. *Shuttle* then gave a long Account of a Dinner he eat the Day before with Justice *Mittimus*, in which he particularly praised the Chicken and Asparagus, and concluded with observing, that the Justice did nothing without his Advice. Immediately

mediately the Doors were thrown open, and in came the Justice himself, at which all the rest raised themselves up, and lowly bowed; he was a pretty large made Man, of a venerable Aspect, and a deal of Gravity, who saluted every body by Name; but observing me was going to retreat in an Huff, if Mr. *Deacon* had not pacified him, by assuring him I was his Friend. Oh! oh! very well, very well, how d'ye do, Sir? And, soon after seating himself, lugged the Leg of a Fowl from one of his Pockets, and a Lunch of Bread and Cheese from the other, and would insist upon it every Body should eat with him: Some Compliments, bestowed by Mr. *Shuttle* on the Goodness of the Fowl, produced an Account from Mr. *Magistrate* of its Cheapness, and a Digression on the Price of Beef, and the Insolence of the Butchers of *Newgate Market*. This over, in came Mr. *Snap*, the Justice's Clerk, with a Warrant to sign, which obliged the Justice to put on his Spectacles, notwithstanding which, he would have signed it at the wrong End, if his Clerk had not directed his Hand. You know what the Affair is, Mr. *Snap*, I suppose? Yes, Sir, replies the Clerk, it is about an Assault: Oh, ho! is it so? Send them to *Bridewell* then. Yes, Sir, says the Clerk, who could hardly contain himself, I made the Commitment out for that Place. The Clerk dismissed, and Supper ended, his Worship took up the Pipes, and filling one, after offering his Tobacco to the whole Company to smell to, saying it was the best in *Christendom*, he poured out a Glass, and drank the King's Health. Another Pause of Silence ensued, till the Health went round, when Captain *Swagger*, a Sea Officer, entered upon Politics, by swearing, it was shameful *England* should ever be in Peace, since she got more by War; adding, that he did not doubt of

seeing us soon Masters of *France, Spain, and the Indies*, if we did but exert our Naval Strength as we did in *Edward the Third's Time*; the Justice here observed, that the Captain must be mistaken, for he never had heard of a Man of War in those Days: The Captain swore, by G--d there was, and that they were called the *Cinque Ports*, from there being Five of them. Mr. *Shuttle* observed, that *France* never could be conquered, it was so much bigger than *England*; which the Justice disputed, and said, *England* he was sure was bigger, and applied to me for a Decision, saying, I looked as if I had been abroad, and could certainly tell. I was fearful of offending either Side, so contented myself, by telling him, that what was 'called *L' Isle de France*, where the City of *Paris* stood, was much less than *England*; at which he set up a Laugh of Triumph, telling Mr. *Shuttle*, it was hard if he should not know, when he had *Berry's Map of France* in his Parlour, and his Wife had an Uncle who was Cook to the Duke of *Orleans*. This proud Vaunt was concluded with a Bumper, in which he drank Confusion to Cardinal *Fleury*, and Damnation to the *French King*. Now they began to be noisy, and talked in separate Sets about their Wives and Children, and their several Professions, which was interrupted by Mr. *Bonnet* the Peruke-Maker's singing a bawdy Song, to which Mr. *Shuttle*, licking his Lips, cried *Oncour*; soon afterwards the Justice fell asleep, *Shuttle* got drunk and abused the Captain, the Captain struck him, the Tables were overturned, and we thought it high Time to pay our Shot and move off; which we did, Mr. *Deacon* assuring me, as we went Home, that, if I had not been a Stranger, I should have heard very good Conversation; but did not doubt I should be made Amends the next Time.

When

When I arrived at Home, I made many Reflections upon what the World generally calls *Conversation*, which is so far from being what is really intended by the Word, that it is rather a Perversion of it, and tho' perhaps twenty Thousand People in *London* meet every Night for that Purpose, one might safely lay an even Wager, that scarce an hundred ever partake of the Sweets of that enlivening and improving Banquet, or understand what Conversation is.

In six Weeks after my Friend's Departure, upon a Visit to Mr. *Diaper*, I found he had just received a Letter from him, by Way of *Lisbon*, where they had been obliged to touch to refit, having met with a Storm in the *Bay of Biscay*, which had done them considerable Damage. There was also a Letter for me, one for Mr. *Bellair*, and another for Miss *Sukey*, both which Mr. *Diaper* desired me to take the Charge of transmitting, which I did accordingly. My Letter was to the following Effect:

My very dear FRIEND,

AFTER a tempestuous Voyage, which has already well seasoned me to my new Life, we have put into *Lisbon*, to repair our shattered Vessel, from whence I take an Opportunity of writing to you and the Rest of my Friends. Alas! I did not know Half the Pain I should feel in this Separation from every Thing that is dear to me! My endearing *Sukey* runs for ever in my Mind, and I survey the awful Distance that will separate us still more and more, with a Terror that I cannot describe. I have no one now to tell my Grievs to, and I turn my Eyes in vain on every Side to find my dear *Thompson*, to solace and com-

fort me in my Distress. Oh! had Fortune kindly joined us both in the same Adventure, I had then been happy; but now,

“ — *Like the ship-wreck'd Mariner, agbaf,*
 “ *On fome curs'd barren Sbelve, I feek in vain,*
 “ *With wand'ring Eyes, for Help in my Defpair!*

I hope this will find you, my ever-valued Affociate, in better Health and Spirits than when the Writer left you; and that, if Providence fends me again to revisit my native Skies, I fhall fee you cured of a hopelefs Grief that can be of no Avail to recal the precious Saint you have loft, who now perhaps attends and watches o'er your Steps, as your Guardian Angel.

I have defired my dear Father to put my Letter to the Charmer of my Soul into your Hands, trufing to your Care for its fafe Conveyance. Whilft I write, my Hand fhakes, and I tremble with Apprehenfion at what may have happened fince my Departure! Oh! this cruel Uncertainty, that Difance creates, of what paffes, is grievous: Often I wifh I had the Power of transporting myfelf with a Thought from Place to Place, to folve my Doubts of your Healths and Profp erity. You may now, with every Body elfe that I love and efteem, have become the Prey of Death's daily Ravages: Tormenting Thought! which I muft not, will not indulge, for it would carry with it Diftraction and Madnefs. My fincere Refpects attend Mr. *Prig*, who, I hope, never leaves you long enough for you to increafe your Melancholy. Our Captain and the Reft of our Gentlemen are very agreeable Companions, and I am as happy as a Man can poffibly be in my Station, and have hitherto preferved my Health very well. Adieu,
 dear

dear Friend ; you'll hardly hear from me again till some homeward bound Ship comes from the *Indies*, by the first of which, if alive and well, I will not fail to write to you, and every body else, at large. Take Care of my lovely Maid, and keep her Mind as easy and composed as possible, whenever you have the Happiness to see her, tho' I suppose she is now gone, with her Brother, into the Country.

If, oh ! ye Powers supreme, who still preside
O'er all Events, and all our Actions guide,
Virtue, and Virtue's Votaries, are your Care,
Preserve the best of Friends, and kindest Fair !
Shed balmy Comfort, wheresoe'er they move,
Ah ! cure an anxious Grief, from absent Love !
Restore to Peace a Mind in deep Despair !
And suffer patient Calm to enter there !
And, oh ! protect me thro' the raging Main,
And safe restore me to their Arms again !
Rebuke the Billows, that destructive roll,
And spread their baneful Rage from Pole to Pole :
Soft may the Breezes fill the swelling Sail,
And no rude Storm deform the gentle Gale.

Excuse my Numbers, and believe me, my dearest *Thompson*,

Thy eternally affectionate

and sincere Friend,

W. DIAPER.

C H A P. XXXIV.

He, with Prig, is attacked by Footpads.—They take three of them.—One of them proves to be Packer.—Discourse between Thompson and him.—He is committed to Newgate, tried at the Old Bailey, condemned, and executed.—Observations arising from his Behaviour in his last Moments.—Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley arrive in Town.

I Dispatched an Answer to my Friend, by a Ship that was just sailing to *Lisbon*, which probably might arrive there Time enough to give him the wished Intelligence how Matters stood in *England*, and, by the same Conveyance, sent another Letter to *Archer*.

One Evening, as Mr. *Prig* and myself were returning from *Hampstead*, where we had taken an Excursion, somewhat later than ordinary, on Foot, thinking it the safest Way, we struck thro' the Fields between *Kentish Town* and *Bloomsbury*, and, for our better Security, as there were many Accounts of Robberies committed between *Hampstead* and *London*, had drawn our Hangers, which we carried naked in our Hands. We had already crossed three Fields, and could plainly discover the Lights from *Red-lion-Street* and *Queen-Square*, so that we imagined we had got clear of any Molestation; but we were mistaken, for, suddenly, passing over a narrow Causeway, two Men jumped out of a Ditch on one Side, which two others did the same on the other Side, and, with a Multitude of Oaths and Execrations, ordered us to stand, and deliver, or we were dead Men. As we perceived each of them was armed with a Pistol, we did not think proper, for the Sake of a litile Money, to be Fool-hardy,

Fool-hardy, and so directly delivered our Purfes to them ; at the fame Time I told them we had no more, for our Watches were left behind us ; and desired them to treat us like Gentlemen : Aye, so we will, says one of them, and immediately fired his Pistol, the Ball of which grazed upon my Shoulder, and took away a Piece of my Coat. We immediately concluded we were to expect no Quarter from them, and therefore, turning Back to Back, prepared to make the best Defence we were able, and, in that Position, received the Fire of another Pistol, two others flashing in the Pan, without receiving any Hurt, and then were attacked on all Sides with Bludgeons, which they had concealed in their Bosoms. We bestirred ourselves as nimbly as we possibly could, but yet were fearful we should be overpowered with Numbers, when a lucky Stroke I made, cut one of the Fellows down the Shoulder ; and, shortening my Hanger, which was a cut-and-thrust one, I ran it up to the Gripe, in his Body, at which he gave a Groan, and fell down at my Feet. There needed no more to dishearten the Rest, who directly took to their Heels ; but we pursued them so nimbly, crying out, *Thieves*, all the Way, that, at the End of *Red-lion-street*, they were all three taken, and we immediately carried them into a Public-house, 'till we could get more Assistance, and convey them before a Magistrate. We found no other offensive Weapons upon searching them ; but no Surprise could be equal to ours, when, in the Face of one of these Foot-pads, we discovered the Features of that Villain *Packer* ! I gave a great Cry, occasioned by my Astonishment, and asked him the Reason he was not contented with our Money, but pursued our Lives with so much Inveteracy, which had brought him into his present Circumstances :

I added,

C H A P. XXXIV.

He, with Prig, is attacked by Footpads.—They take three of them.—One of them proves to be Packer.—Discourse between Thompson and him.—He is committed to Newgate, tried at the Old Bailey, condemned, and executed.—Observations arising from his Behaviour in his last Moments.—Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley arrive in Town.

I Dispatched an Answer to my Friend, by a Ship that was just sailing to *Lisbon*, which probably might arrive there Time enough to give him the wished Intelligence how Matters stood in *England*, and, by the same Conveyance, sent another Letter to *Archer*.

One Evening, as Mr. *Prig* and myself were returning from *Hampstead*, where we had taken an Excursion, somewhat later than ordinary, on Foot, thinking it the safest Way, we struck thro' the Fields between *Kentish Town* and *Bloomsbury*, and, for our better Security, as there were many Accounts of Robberies committed between *Hampstead* and *London*, had drawn our Hangers, which we carried naked in our Hands. We had already crossed three Fields, and could plainly discover the Lights from *Red-lion-Street* and *Queen-Square*, so that we imagined we had got clear of any Molestation; but we were mistaken, for, suddenly, passing over a narrow Causeway, two Men jumped out of a Ditch on one Side, which two others did the same on the other Side, and, with a Multitude of Oaths and Execrations, ordered us to stand, and deliver, or we were dead Men. As we perceived each of them was armed with a Pistol, we did not think proper, for the Sake of a little Money, to be Fool-hardy,

Fool-hardy, and so directly delivered our Purfes to them ; at the same Time I told them we had no more, for our Watches were left behind us ; and desired them to treat us like Gentlemen : Aye, so we will, says one of them, and immediately fired his Pistol, the Ball of which grazed upon my Shoulder, and took away a Piece of my Coat. We immediately concluded we were to expect no Quarter from them, and therefore, turning Back to Back, prepared to make the best Defence we were able, and, in that Position, received the Fire of another Pistol, two others flashing in the Pan, without receiving any Hurt, and then were attacked on all Sides with Bludgeons, which they had concealed in their Bosoms. We bestirred ourselves as nimbly as we possibly could, but yet were fearful we should be overpowered with Numbers, when a lucky Stroke I made, cut one of the Fellows down the Shoulder ; and, shortening my Hanger, which was a cut-and-thrust one, I ran it up to the Gripe, in his Body, at which he gave a Groan, and fell down at my Feet. There needed no more to dishearten the Rest, who directly took to their Heels ; but we pursued them so nimbly, crying out, *Thieves*, all the Way, that, at the End of *Red-lion-street*, they were all three taken, and we immediately carried them into a Public-house, 'till we could get more Assistance, and convey them before a Magistrate. We found no other offensive Weapons upon searching them ; but no Surprise could be equal to ours, when, in the Face of one of these Foot-pads, we discovered the Features of that Villain *Packer* ! I gave a great Cry, occasioned by my Astonishment, and asked him the Reason he was not contented with our Money, but pursued our Lives with so much Inveteracy, which had brought him into his present Circumstances :

I added,

I added, I was sorry to see him in such a Situation, for he must now expect the Reward due to so many Crimes as he had been guilty of; at the same Time wishing any other Person had been the Means of bringing him to Justice. He lour-ed a scornful Look, and swore nothing grieved him, but that he had not been the Death of me, for then Hanging would have been but a Trifle; and could I, says he, have found you out, long since, I'd have made you the Victim of my Resentment. I told him I was sorry his Disposition was so wicked; for tho' he had done me many Injuries, and had well nigh caused the Death of my Friend, who was attacked by his Procurement at *Chel-sea*, yet I could not remember I had ever provoked him, by any Thing I had ever transacted, to such an inhuman Resentment. No, he replied, was not you the Means of turning me from Mr. *Diaper's*, by making yourself busy with what you had no Concern with? I assured him the contrary, and that what I did in that Affair was what I merely thought my Duty, and what I could not dispense with myself from doing, without mixing it with any Thing personal against himself, more than the Nature of the Case required. By this Time some Persons returned, with an Account that the Man, who had fallen, was dead, and a Constable entering at the same Time, tho' very late, we carried them before a neighbouring Justice of the Peace, and the Matter was so clear against them, that he committed them all three to *Newgate*; and, the Sessions being begun at the *Old Baily* the Day before, the Bill of Indictment was found; they were tried the last Day but one of the Sessions, and up-
the strongest Evidence, condemned to die. *Packer* behaved with the utmost Boldness, during the whole Tryal; and, reflecting upon his former Appearance and Behaviour, it gave me a melancholy

ly Concern to see such an Alteration. His present Disposition and Temper, to be sure, however, was natural, whereas the Sobriety he had formerly assumed must have been all Hypocrisy and Grimace.

Packer had a great many Friends; but his disorderly Behaviour had so incensed them, that no one would stir on his Behalf, and, with the other Criminals, he was soon after executed at *Tyburn*, where he would make no Confession, but died in an hardened and senseless Disregard to Religion and Hereafter. Such was the End of this Man, and, notwithstanding the manifold Injuries I had received of him, 'twas with Pain I considered myself as one of the Instruments of his Punishment. Mr. *Diaper* was also concerned at his Fate, but 'twas contrary to all the Maxims of Reason, Self-defence, and Regard to the Public, to endeavour to get him a Reprieve, which, otherwise, by that Gentleman's numerous Friends, there would have been little Reason to doubt. How soon his Death followed that of the unhappy Woman he had debauched and ruined! and of which I was a Spectator! And the Hand of Providence was so visible in their Punishment here, that I hope we may entertain an Opinion that Mercy will be extended to them in a future State, from that Being who is all Forgiveness and Forbearance, and of whom Mercy is one of the greatest and most sublime Attributes.

I made many Observations upon the Behaviour of this Man in his last Moments. One would be at a great Loss to conceive how a human Creature, capable of Reflection, can work himself up into such an utter Insensibility, at an Hour so awful, as that of the Separation of the Soul from the Body, and launching into the boundless, immense Ocean of Eternity: And yet we see daily Instances of this shocking Stupidity, for Stupidity it must be in
such

such Instances as these ; where the Wretch has not that Innocence and Purity, that Consciousness of having acted like a rational Creature, and that *earnest Hope*, that *fond Desire*, that *Longing after Immortality*, which fills the Heart, and supports the Spirits of the just Man in his last Moments. Annihilation would be more tolerable to them, were they to think at all, than a future State of Existence ; they would feel no *secret Dread*, nor *inward Horror*, of *sinking into Nought* ; far from it, the Thought would be agreeable. Ignorance, such total Ignorance, as I have observed, in some of the lowest of our Race, may be one Reason of the Unconcern at a Circumstance it is possible they know little of ; but may we not rather seek for it, than in Ignorance, and a false Bravery, in the Consolations they receive from the Ordinary, the Absolutions and Promises he gives them ? He administers the Sacraments, and assures them of Pardon and Remission of Sins, thro' the Merits of *Christ*, Nothing can come nearer to the Practices of the *Roman Catholics*, than this artificial Assurance and Comfort given to the Criminal ; and I think Dr. *Mandeville's* Scheme would have a better Effect, both upon them, and the Spectators of their Exit, when he advises not to prostitute the Sacrament in that Manner, but to suffer them to go full of Despair, *weeping and gnashing of Teeth*, to the Gallows ; which, perhaps, would have a real good Effect upon their Minds, bring them to a Sense of their Condition, and make their Breathings, and sore Sighings of Heart, an acceptable Sacrifice for their Sins. Now, full of the Notion, that, by saying they believe what the Ordinary tells them, they shall be saved, adding there- to the sacred Ceremonies of the Church, they think

think they may put on what Appearance suits their Tempers best at the shocking Moment, and their natural Vanity directs them to such an one as shall gain the greatest Applause with the Mob. The Ordinary should be honest enough to tell them the Uncertainty, the evident Uncertainty of their Repentance being received, when it is deferred to the last Moment of Life; that Death-bed Repentances are not worthy of that Term, and that no one can be said sincerely to repent, unless he has an Opportunity, and does amend his Life; that, indeed, God is a Being of infinite Mercy, and that he has great Confidence, if they are truly sincere, that their Prayers, tho' late, may be received, and plead at the Throne of Grace; and further than this he ought not, nor should not, presume to go.

The Prosecution we were thus obliged to, of these Men, took us up a considerable Time; and it was scarce finished, when a Message was left at my Lodgings, that Mr. *Archer* and Mr. *Sharpley* were arrived in Town; and that, as they could stay but a Week at most, they begged as much of my Company as possible, and desired I would meet them that very Evening, at the *Standard Tavern* in *Leicester-fields*. I was quite overjoyed at the Thoughts of seeing these two dear Friends, whom I loved as much, almost, as if they had been my Fathers. I could not imagine, however, what brought them up to Town, and suspected it had some Relation to my Affairs, or that somewhat had happened to their Sons, more than ordinary, since I had heard from them: So, full of eager Expectation, begging the Favour of *Prig's Company*, I hastened, as soon as the Hour came, to the Place of Appointment.

C H A P. XXXV.

*He meets Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharp-
 ley.—He apologizes for his Friend.—Receives an
 Account of Sir Walter's Alteration of Temper,
 and the Difference between him and the Squire.
 —They bring him a Letter from Fidele.—
 Its remarkable Contents.—His Rage after pe-
 rusing it.—They return into Yorkshire.—
 Prig sets out upon a Journey.—He grows more
 and more melancholy.*

MY Meeting with these worthy Gentlemen was accompanied with Marks of the sincerest Friendship and Affection, proceeding from the Heart, undefiled with the Grimaces of Compliment. I introduced Mr. Prig to their Acquaintance, as a Man I greatly esteemed, and was thanked, on all Sides, for the Favour. After the first Civilities were over, I enquired after the Health of my Father and Mother, and their Families. My Father had sent me a Letter, by Mr. Sharp-ley, in which he informed me, that he and my Mother were in perfect Health, but that he was somewhat chagrined, at not being able to come up to London in less than three Months after the Time he before had appointed, and which was now just on expiring; because the Gentleman, who had greatest Part of his ready Money in his Hands, would not be able to call up what he thought necessary before. He told me, in the Conclusion, that, if I had no overbearing Inclination to stay in Town till then, he should be glad if I would come into Yorkshire, and spend the intermediate Space of Time, between this and his setting out, to see me settled in the World. There was no Answer to my Request of going abroad,

abroad, as my Friend *Diaper* had done, which a little surprized me, as I had made it in so pressing a Manner. Mr. *Sbarpley* had accompanied his Friend up to Town, thro' Civility, and principally with a Desire to see me, for Mr. *Archer's* Business was to execute some Commissions for his Son, who went on at *Oporto* with great Success. As to young *Sbarpley*, I found he was, at present, Second Lieutenant of the *Swiftsure*, to which he had been removed from the *Loo*, and was now upon the Station of *Boston* in *New England*; of which I took a Memorandum, with a Purpose to write to him the first Opportunity. We now began to talk over old Affairs, and Mr. *Archer* was surprized, he said, at the Step my Friend *Diaper* had taken, and more especially when he understood with how much Ease he might have entered again into Trade, with an absolute Prospect of retrieving his Circumstances; to which I replied, That it was no easy Matter for a Man who has once found himself at the End of his Wishes, but is suddenly disappointed by some unforeseen Stroke of ill Fortune, to assume Spirit and Perseverance sufficient to Bear the Reflection, and the tedious Toil of acquiring, by going over again the slow Methods of Industry and Trade, what he had lost; and especially when Love intervenes, and points out every tedious Path to our Wishes, as an Injury done to the beloved Object, and to the Completion of our Hopes and Expectations; and therefore I could easily excuse, from my Friend's Youth, and sanguine Disposition, his hazarding himself as he had done, seeing, that if a few Years, in the Employ he had embarked in, were spent with the usual Success those Gentlemen meet with, he would find himself in a better Situation than he could expect to be in, after having spent his whole Life in Traffic at
Home.

Home. I even went so far, as to say, that, since some cruel Disappointments I had myself met with, I had much rather venture abroad, than settle in my Profession in *England*, where my Ambition would be constantly checked by the Idea that I had lost every Thing in the World, that could serve as a Spur to me to undergo the necessary Fatigues of Business; nor could I forbear shedding Tears at this Conclusion, and the Presence of two Persons who revived in my Mind all the painfully pleasing Transactions of my disastrous and unfortunate Passion. They were very much moved at this Apostrophe of Grief, which naturally led them to condole with me on the Loss of my *Louisa*, which they did in Terms that plainly shewed me what an Interest they took in my Welfare. I should, says Mr. *Archer*, have been at a Loss how to have brought this Subject on the Carpet, knowing the Sensibility you still have, when it is mentioned, if you had not put me thus upon it; but I am able to give you a better Account than you have yet received, I believe, of the Death of that young Lady, and what happened afterwards in her Family, which is so much altered, by the Loss of her, that you cannot help being amazed at the Relation of it. I endeavoured to restrain my Tears, and besought him to proceed, which he did, in the following Manner: Sir *Walter* was not present at his Daughter's Death, but was at *York* with that Villain the Squire, in order to the Settlement of some Affairs previous to the Marriage which he had resolved on between her and that Nephew, and which he had tyrannically endeavoured, but in vain, to procure her Consent to, and had left her with Menaces of all that Displeasure and Rage could dictate, if she did not comply, at his Return. His Sister, in sending him the mournful Tidings,

Tidings, let him into some Things in Relation to the Squire, that immediately induced him to discard him for ever ; and he was so touched with his Daughter's Loss, that he could not bear to visit the Place of her Interment, which was in the Family Vault at *Taunton*, where her Mother was also deposited ; for Sir *Walter's* Family, you know, was originally of *Somersetshire*, and he has never attempted to go there since ; for his Sister was so much affected with the Loss of her Niece, that she went soon after to *France*, with an Intent to reside there, the Remainder of her Days, after bestowing all the hard Epithets that Grief and Anger could suggest, against his Cruelty and Barbarity. He has been ever since at his House in *Yorkshire*, and he is so altered, that he has quite forsaken his old Diversions ; and when I waited upon him to take my Leave, and told him of my designed Rout to *London*, he shed Tears, and said, with a melancholy Gesture, that perhaps I might then see poor *Joe*, to whom he desired I would give his Love, and tell him he was a severe Sufferer by what he had acted against him and his Daughter, his dear *Louisa* ; had I known, continued he, the Worth of that Youth, so well as I do now, I believe, I should have conquered my Aversion to his Alliance with my Daughter, whom I was foolishly endeavouring, nay, did sacrifice, to the Views of one of the worst of Men, whom I have since found out to be, in the lowest Degree, base. I can now, alas ! make no other Recompence, than by assuring him I shall ever esteem him as my own Child ; and pray tell him, if I can be of any Use to him in his future Concerns, neither the Inclination, nor the Money, shall be wanting. I was surprized, you may imagine, at such a Declaration ; and more so, when he informed me, that *Fidèle*,
his

his Daughter's Waiting-maid, had yielded to his Persuasions, and the Desires of your Mother, to quit Mrs. *Goodwill*, and she is now Sir *Walter's* House-keeper ; he does nothing without consulting her, and endeavours all he can to compensate to her for the Loss of her kind Lady. She gave me a Letter for you, when I left the House, which I have here brought you. Upon this he delivered me the Letter, which I knew to be *Fidele's* Hand, and which I opened hastily, much astonished with what had been told me. I found it as follows :

DEAR SIR,

I Hope you will excuse the Trouble I am going to give you, when you know that my Obligations to you, and some Matters I have to relate, of my late excellent Lady, are my Motives for writing to you. In the first Place, Sir, let me return you my unfeigned Thanks, for the kind and genteel Treatment I have received of Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady, since you placed me with them ; and the Marks of your Favour and Remembrance I received, at several Times, when I was there, which will ever engage the most grateful Returns that shall be in my Power. You will be surprized when I acquaint you, that I am now with my old Master, to whose pressing Sollicitations, and the Commands of your honoured Mother, which I more regarded, I, at last, consented ; and he has made me ample Amends, by placing me at the Head of his Family, where, however, I have the continual Pain of reflecting, by all the Objects before me, upon our great and irreparable Loss in the Death of my dear young Lady, which no body but yourself could feel to
tenderly

tenderly as I did. Sir *Walter* has taken on very grievously for my Mistress's Loss, and is so changed, that, if any one were to say an ill Thing of you in the Family, he would immediately lose his Favour. I have gathered several Things from him, at 'Times, which I shall acquaint you of, if ever I have the Happiness to see you again; but two Things I cannot now dispense with myself from telling you: He has with the utmost Concern, told me that the Squire led him into a Scheme that was, in the End, fatal to Miss *Louisa*, which was to propagate a Story in *Somersetshire*, that he had killed you in a Duel; and, after that Report, she never held up her Head again. He has likewise, since that, been informed, by one of the Squire's Attendants, of his Usage of you in the Road to Mr. *Goodwill's*, and his having attacked your Life by Ruffians, near to his own Seat: All which conspired, with his Regard to my Lady's Memory, to render him so distasteful to his Uncle, that he has forbid him ever entering his Doors, or appearing any where, where he is; and has resolved never to give him a Penny more than he can help. He is retired to a little Estate he has near *Doncaster*, full of Spleen and Resentment, to brood over the Villainies he has committed, and the fine Prospects he has lost. I pray Heaven, Sir, to protect and prosper you, and to enable you to overcome your Distraction of Mind. From

Your most obliged and affectionate

bumble Servant,

FIDELE HEARTWELL.

The Circumstance of this Letter called up all my Grievs afresh; and I bemoaned my Loss in so tenderly affecting a Manner, mingled, every now and then, with such Motions of Rage, and
Vows

Vows of Revenge, against the Author of my Unhappiness, that my Friends were at the greatest Loss how to calm my Transports. I even raved against Sir *Walter* himself, for a blind, stupid, insensible Wretch, who merited ten Thousand Times more Tortures than he had, or was likely to suffer; cursing him, in the bitterest Terms, and wishing all the Plagues upon his Head that could be mentioned, hoping, with *Shakespear*,

———— a *Thousand Knees*,
Ten thousand Years together, naked, fasting,
Upon some barren Mountain, and still Winter,
In Storm perpetual, would not move the Gods
To look what Way he was. —————

When I had thus vented all that my Dolour and Rage could suggest, I yielded to the Supplications of my three Friends, and became more composed; but still, every now and then, the silent Tear would trickle down my Cheek, and the bursting Sigh rend my very Bosom in Twain.

We spent the Remainder of the Evening in a very agreeable Manner; and, as my Friends were not provided with a Lodging, I prevailed upon them, the one to accept of Part of a Bed with me, and the other with Mr. *Prig*, who was quite smitten with their Conversation, and earnestly desired as great a Share of their Company, as he could have, during their Stay in Town.

I could by no Means bring myself to go down into *Yorkshire*; I was too much disorder'd, even upon the least Mention of my dearest *Louisa*, to venture myself where every Place, every Face I saw, would revive all that Flow of Sorrow and Anxiety, that was at present somewhat stifled, by the Endeavours of my Friends, and my own,

and

and the frequent Change of Company and Place, I, on Purpose, indulged myself in ; so that I wrote my Father Word, I would wait in Town for his wished-for Arrival ; giving him such Reasons for my Resolution, as he must be very well satisfied with.

'Twas with great Reluctance, after ten Days Stay in *London*, in which I constantly accompanied them and frequently carried them to Mr. *Diaper's* 'Co intry House, who made them heartily welcome, as well on his Son's Account as mine, that I parted with our two Friends, who having finished the Business that brought them up, to their Satisfaction, set out for *Yorkshire*, and Mr. *Prig* and myself accompanied them twenty or thirty Miles out of *London*, where we took a very affectionate Farewel. Soon after, I was also robbed of another agreeable Companion, in my Friend *Prig*, who was obliged to go on a Journey, into the West of *England*, on some Law Affairs, which he imagined would employ him between three and four Months ; and now I was left too much to my own Reflections, which I indulged in all their baneful Ravages over my Soul, and gave Way to all the distracting Gloom they occasioned ; whole Days I used to shut myself up in my Chamber, and give a Loose to my Complaints and Tears, for the Death of my poor *Louisa*, whose lovely Image was ever before my Eyes, and whose Accents hung upon my Ears. Mr. *Deacon* took Notice of this Alteration, with Concern, and begun to call more frequently upon me, and took me out to his Societies, where, indeed, sometimes the very comical Absurdity of the Company would draw a Smile from me, and chase away an uneasy Thought ; but I wanted my dear *Diaper*, whose kind Reasonings, and consoling Arguments, could
only

only have been effectual enough to have made me more patient and easy. In short, I began to be a Torment to myself, and a Pain to every body about me.

C H A P. XXXVI.

He takes to Drinking.—Mr. Deacon dies, by which he is involved in a sad Scrape.—He is arrested.—Carried to the Spunging-house.—His Treatment there.—Removes himself, by Habeas Corpus, to the Fleet.—His Motives for doing so.

THE stupid Languor of my Mind, and the continual Perturbation of my Spirits, which were incessantly harassed in this Manner, at length brought me into a State of downright Insensibility ; and I went, as it were, mechanically, to some Club or other, every Evening, where I contracted a Habit of Drinking, than which nothing could be more low and degrading, I ran into the Strain of their Discourse, and felt a Kind of Relief from myself, and a Pleasure in saying Things nothing at all to the Purpose ; and, when Wine or Beer could not suffice to lay my Uneasiness, I had Recourse to Drams, which grew so habitual to me, that I kept a private Bottle in my Chamber ; to which I used to apply so frequently, that it was a Mercy I did not kill myself. Could any Creature be more fallen ! but, in short, Ambition, and every other Incentive to Life, and Praise-worthy Actions, were defunct in me ; and in the sole Reflection that I had lost *Louisa*, I was dead to any Acquisition of Name, Fortune, or Happiness. Oh ! how wretched a Situation

Situation was this ! and the Force of these hellish Cordials, soon expired, left me in a worse State than before, which could only be mended by a Repetition of the same fictitious Spirits.

I was thus lost, when, one Morning, poor Mr. *Deacon*, who, as I said before, was too great a Votary to the Bottle, dropped down dead in his Compting-house, with a sudden Fit of the Apoplexy : He had received some Intimations before, that he was going to be subject to that dreadful Disorder, and had resolved, over and over, to drink less than he used to do ; but had not had Power enough to break his Habit of Evening Debauches, to which he thus fell a Sacrifice.

I was much concerned at the Death of so worthy a Man, who was a perfect Adorer of my Father, and, on that Account, had been a good Friend to me ; but I soon found, to my Cost, that, by a Piece of Imprudence we had both been guilty of, I was like to be a greater Sufferer by his Decease, than I was first aware of.

Mr. *Deacon*, about two Months since, had a very large Demand for Money ; and his Affairs were so situated, at that Time, that he could not command so much as he wanted, by 600*l*. His Friendship with my Father, and that which subsisted between him and me, made all his Concerns known to me ; and I foolishly offered to give him my Note for so much, which, as I was well known to have served my Time to Mr. *Diaper*, and to be going into Trade for myself, and my Father to be a Man in very good Circumstances, he might easily get the Sum he wanted upon : This, tho' an Affair that ought to be very cautiously

ously transacted, was what I had known to be very common in the City, upon such Emergencies ; and I did not doubt Mr. *Deacon's* Honour, who was rich, and who promised me to take it up, before it came due ; so that I took no counter Security from him, and confided entirely in his Integrity and Discretion, forgetting the excellent Maxims I had imbibed in my Apprenticeship, of leaving nothing of that Nature to Chance, or the Accidents of Death or Sickness. Mr. *Deacon* was, I am persuaded, a very honest Man ; but, somehow or other, not being able to take up my Note, as soon as due, had called on the Person who had it in his Possession, and made him easy, by appointing a Time of Payment ; so that I thought the Affair quite over, when his sudden Death betrayed me to that he had not paid it, and it was still in the same Hands : What to do I could not tell ; I waited on Mr. *Deacon's* Brother, who was his sole Heir and Executor ; but being a mercenary, selfish Wretch, he pretended his Brother had left no Minute of the Affair any where amongst his Books and Papers ; and flatly refused to believe what I related, or to pay me the Money ; and, after all I could say, I was forced to leave him, venting such Reproaches only, as my Anger and Resentment dictated to me to make Use of. I thought this as mortifying a Stroke as any Man could meet with, thus to be trapped, before he begun the World, by his Good-nature and Gratitude, out of 600*l.* besides, I had not the Money to pay it, and my Reputation was likely to suffer upon the Occasion. I was quite ashamed to mention it to Mr. *Diaper* ; and, as to my Father, I resolved, if I could not get Time for the
the

the Payment, to undergo any Thing, rather than make him acquainted with it ; and it was a great Misfortune to me, that *Prig* was out of Town, who was most capable of advising me in such an Affair ; for, as to the Clerk he had left in his Chambers, he was a mere *Green-born*. I was resolved therefore to keep out of the Way, as the Person who had the Note was very vociferous in demanding the Money ; so that I did not stir from my Lodgings for near a Fortnight ; but, as ill Luck would have it, I expected one Morning a Porter from an Inn, with some Presents from Mr. *Goodwill*, which I was obliged in Civility, to receive ; and, in the Interim, the Maid of the House came up to my Chamber, to let me know a Porter below had brought me a Letter, and something in a Basket, whom I immediately ordered up ; but my Blood was congealed in my Veins almost, when, presenting the Letter, which was all a Sham, he told me he had a Warrant against me, at the Suit of Mr. *Vulture*, the Money-scrivener ; and, immediately, three or four more villainous Countenances, *sans ceremonie*, bounced into the Apartment. I found it was as vain, as imprudent to resist, and, putting on a tranquil Air, desired to know where they proposed to carry me ? Sir, replies the Chief of them, my *Lock-up House* is in *Gray's-Inn-Lane*, where you will be as much at your Ease as at Home ; so, ordering a Coach to be called, and giving proper Directions to my Landlord, if any body enquired, I suffered myself to be conducted to the aforesaid Place of *salva Custodia*. I was put at my Entrance, into a Room, where were several Prisoners of both Sexes, some airily singing and talking, others stupid, and full of Despair at their Misfortunes ; but all seemingly agreed in this, that Drinking

was a Cure for their Maladies. As soon as the Officer had left me, one of them advanced, and very facetiously welcomed me to my new Quarters, where he said he had been several Times ; and seeing me look somewhat dull, bid me not mind it, one half of the World had been there already, and the other must come there soon ; come, Sir, we must have your *Footing*, and, when your *Gall's* a little broke, you'll be easy. I asked him what he meant by my *Footing* ? Only Two and Sixpence for a Bowl of Punch, which is what we all pay at our Entrance into this noble Society, Sir, and you look too much like a Gentleman to dispute the Custom. I immediately gave him the Two and Sixpence, and a Bowl was brought in, which was soon sucked up by my Associates, who then became very curious and inquisitive to know my Business, and the Occasion of my being *bum'd*, as they called my being arrested. I had no Mind to satisfy them, nor indeed, did I relish their Company, but immediately had a Messenger called, to send a Note by to Mr. *Brisk*, Mr. *Prig's* Clerk, that I might have a little Advice. Mean Time the Officer had intimated to the Keeper of the House, that I was a warm Hand, and flush of *Cole*, as I afterwards heard ; so that he came with a great many Bows and Scrapes, and told me, if I pleased, I might have a Room to myself, if I did not choose so much Company. I told him I had much rather be alone ; so, taking Leave of my new Acquaintance, he ushered me into an Apartment up two Pair of Stairs, where he locked me in, and left me to my Meditations. I was, indeed, harrassed by my uneasy Thoughts, to some Purpose, and never was seen so forlorn a Wretch ; my former Sufferings and my present Distress combined together, to render me

me exquisitely unhappy. I had now the Idea of the Pain and Regrets I should give my Father, whose Reproaches, for my Want of Conduct and Prudence, were ever in my Ears, and made me perfectly distracted : At length Mr. *Brisk* came, who relieved me from my present Perturbation by his Presence. He wished his Master had been at Home, who, by backing the Warrant, would have given me Time to put in Bail ; but as that could not now be done, considering the exorbitant Expence I must be at where I was, he advised me to remove myself to the *Fleet*, till he came to Town, which, in the End would save me Money ; and he gave me such an Idea of that Prison, that I could not help thinking it far preferable to the Dungeon Life I led at present, and was likely to do, if I continued at the *Spunging-house* any longer ; so I agreed to what he said, and gave him the necessary Money to procure me an *Habeas Corpus* for my Removal. I had luckily above twenty Guineas by me at the Time of my Arrest, which in some Measure supported my Spirits ; and now I had taken my Resolution, methought I was easier, when the Officer came into my Apartment, to whom I imparted what I had done. He seemed quite chagrined, and put on a Deal of Ill-humour upon it, no Doubt expecting me to renew the Writ, and, for the Sake of avoiding a Goal, ply him continually with Civility-money, to permit me to remain where I was. He said the Plaintiff would take any Bail, and was surprized I would go to the *Fleet*, which he represented in the most shocking Colours to me ; but I was prepared for him, and the four and twenty Hours not being expired, I knew he could not carry me to the County Goal, *Newgate*, before my *Habeas Corpus* would be taken out, and then I was secure from the disappointed Rage of these inhuman Gentry : Howe-

ver, my Good-nature operated so strongly, that I gave him Half a Guinea, at which his Brow began to smooth ; and assuming another Tone, he told me he would do any Thing to serve me ; that I was happy to have fallen into his Hands, who was a Gentleman that had been reduced, by Misfortunes, to accept of his present Employ ; that many of his Brethren would have carried me to *Newgate*, upon the first Mention of an *Habeas* ; but as to him, he was a Man who did not love to prey upon Gentlemen under Trouble. All that he said was backed by the Man of the House ; and I could not help calling for a Bowl of Punch, to reward them for their Civility. At Night I went to Bed, about Ten o'Clock, but slept little ; and about Ten the next Morning, Mr. *Briske* brought me News, my *Habeas* would be ready at Night, which made me very easy, for I longed to be in a State of more Liberty. As soon as he was gone, the Officer came in ; and, taking me aside, told me he believed the Plaintiff was a sour ill-tempered Fellow ; and, if I would give him five Guineas, he'd put in Bail above, that should justify their being worth 10,000*l.* tho' one was a Broom-stick-maker, and I might go about my Business, where I would ; but that, if I was obliged to stay publickly in *London*, I might clap in a *Writ of Error*, and fight him off for a Twelvemonth. I was astonished at the Roguery of this Sett of Men ; and, tho' it was not proper for me to reprove him, I conceived so hearty a Dislike to these wicked, incroaching Instruments of the Law, that I would sooner suffer an Injury at any Time, than employ them : To both Plaintiff and Prisoner they will be equally unjust ! Gain is the God they worship ! and I'll venture to say, There is not one in an Hundred that has either Honour or Honesty.

At Night I experienced the Extortion of such infernal Houses, and was charged three Shillings for my Bed, two Shillings for Firing, and five Shillings extraordinary, for occupying the Room by myself; which, with what my Dinners, Suppers, and Liquors, came to, in their Way of Reckoning, amounted for the Day and an Half I staid there, to forty Shillings, and upwards, besides the Half Guinea I gave the Officer: Yet this is suffered in a Country subject to the best Laws, and where we boast so much of our Liberty, and the Privileges of *Englishmen*!

Mr. *Brisk*, a *Tipstaff*, and the *Bailiff*, attended me to a Judge's Chambers, from whence, the usual Forms complied with, we were set down at the Prison-gate about nine o'Clock at Night, and were immediately usher'd into the *Lodge*, where a rough-hewn Fellow, staring me full in the Face, and seeming to devour me with his Eyes, demanded two Shillings as his Fee, telling me, he was the *Head-turnkey*: I complied with his Demand, being advised before by *Brisk*, as also in paying a Compliment of a Bottle of Wine to the rest of his Colleagues, who welcomed me to the College, as they called it, with great Mirth and Jollity. I also paid the Master's Side-fee, and had a Room promised me that very Night at the Rate of Two Shillings and Six-pence *per Week*, ready furnished.

I was the more ready to go the *Fleet*, from the Consideration that I should there be more secret than at a *Spunging-house*, and had conceived a Notion that it was a Place where few People of Consequence were seen to enter; but in this I was mistaken, I afterwards found; for a *Fair*, comparatively speaking, could not have a greater Resort of Persons of all Sorts than this Place, where I

was every Minute known by some body or other. Again, I imagined, when my Father came to *London*, and saw me there, he would be more ready, after such a *faux pas*, as I had been guilty of, to gratify my Inclination of going abroad. I thought I had Money enough to subsist me till his Arrival, for I had been informed, that every Thing was very cheap in this Place, and that a Man could find few Opportunities of spending Money there; in which I was also deceived, as the Sequel will demonstrate; for I believe, by such a Number of People, more Money is hardly ever spent abroad, there not only being all the Incentives to Luxury and Extravagance, but almost an Obligation to comply with them: However, I was now in it, and it was in vain to think of a sudden Retreat: so, following Mr. *Brisk*, we entered the House, and were introduced to a pretty commodious *Coffee-room*, where, at several Tables, were many well dressed Persons, regaling themselves with Variety of Liquors.

C H A P. XXXVII.

He is painted in the Coffee-room.—Adjourns to the Fleet-cellar.—Humourous Appearance of the Guests there.—Hears a Character of Speculist.—Enters his new Apartment.—Description of it.—Character of the Place in general.—Divers Reflections.—He joins with an Ordinary.

WE had not been served with the Bowl of Punch we called for, before several Fellows, most of whom I had taken Notice of in the *Lodge*, came in, one after another, upon different Etrands, and staring me for some Time earnestly in the Face, and seeming to measure my
very

very Height, went out again : I expressed my Suprize at such Treatment, at which the Gentlemen, who were most of them Prisoners, I found, seemed very much diverted, and informed me, they came to *paint me*, by which I afterwards understood was meant to take such an Observation of my Person and Features, as might make me known to them, if ever I came to the *Fig*, for so they call one of the inner Gates of the Prison ; and, indeed without some such Observation, it would be impossible to prevent Escapes amongst such a Number of People as are here confined. These Fellows serve the *Warden* also as Kind of *Delatores*, and are his Intelligencers of every Thing that passes in the Inside of the Place. The Man, that kept the *Coffee-room*, being a very pragmatical, saucy Fellow, we agreed to adjourn to another Scene, and see what Entertainment we could meet with in the *Tap* or *Cellar*, to which we descended by a Staircase ; and upon my Entrance, from the Blackness and Darkness of the Walls, and the low Ceilings, I imagined I was entering the *Temple of Moloch*, and at the Buz and promiscuous Noise of the Guests and the Drawers, put me in Mind of the Hurry and Confusion between Decks in a first Rate *Man of War*. Such a motley Crew of jovial Beings, sure, never were seen any where else ; for my Part, I forgot I was in a Place of Confinement, and began to think I was entering *Tom King's*, or a Booth in *Bartbolomew Fair* : Some were in serious Debate on Matters of high Import, as how to circumvent their Creditors, and escape the Jaws of the Gaol : others were cursing the remorseless Wretches, who had suffered them to linger out so many Years in Misery and Distress, without any View or Prospect, but that of satiating their Inhumanity. Many were dancing from Box to Box, with all the Antics of Madmen ; and these I soon discovered

discovered were the Wits, who caused redoubled Pearls of Laughter at every Thing they said or did. Some were drunk, others half drunk and quarrelling, some eating, some drinking, and, in short, wherever you cast your Eyes, you discovered little that could bespeak the Objects of your View at all touched with their Conditions. The Landlord, perceiving that we were Strangers, accommodated us with a Box, after some little Time, and we called for a Tankard of Beer; and presently all the Company was up in Arms to see the new Prisoner, and many, with a familiar Air, shook me by the Hand, and told me, they were glad to see me there, where, if I had Money, I might live as well as ever I did in my Life. This grew tiresome to me, and *Brisk*, having been there before, asked, if we could not procure a Room? Upon which we were shewed to one, which was as handsome as one in a Tavern, in which were only two grave-looking Gentlemen, who I found were also Prisoners; one of them Sir *William Failer*, a Baronet, and the other Dr. *Diagnostic*, a Physician, who both appeared to be Men of Sense, and expressed a great Concern at seeing me there. We called for a Bottle of Wine, and had some small Matter for Supper, which was brought in by a Man Cook, who was as great an Oddity in Person and Behaviour, as ever I had seen. Sir *William* and the Doctor drank with us, at my Request, and entertained us with the History of the Place, and the Character of the chief Persons in it; and, amongst the rest, told me, there was one Mr. *Speculist*, who was a very clever Man, but had behaved so arrogantly and overbearingly, that he was universally despised by all his Fellow-prisoners in general. Then they cautioned me against lending Money, and advised me to keep as much above Stairs in my own Apartment as possible, which I should

should find more for my Peace and Comfort than being below, where they were perpetually involved in Broils and Factions. The Reckoning coming to be paid between the Baronet and the Physician, I perceived they were at a Kind of a Plunge, not having enough about them, and both pretending to be angry at the Trouble of going to their Rooms for more ; upon which Sir *William* said, he would see if he could find any body in the Tap-room that would oblige him, and prevent his Journey ; seeing this, and thinking them very honest Gentlemen, I pulled out a Crown and begged they would not be at a Loss, since I could oblige them : With some Difficulty they accepted the Favour, promising Payment next Morning ; but I never heard of it again, and soon after found they were notorious, both of them, for borrowing, and never returning what they borrowed. This indeed is the Curse of this Place, and a Man should never carry about him more than enough for his own Use ; for, if he does, he's sure to have Customers enough to make it away to. At Ten, *Brisk* was obliged to depart, when the tremendous Cry of, *Who goes out ?* was bawled forth by the Watchmen, and soon after the *Chamberlain*, with a Pair of Sheets on his Arm, summoned me to explore my new Apartment. Guess my Surprise, when passing thro' a narrow Kind of Passage, which stunk most abominably, and which I understood afterwards was called *Mount Scoundrel*, I was introduced to a little Room, that I presume had been, some twenty Years before, white-washed, but now was so black, and the Walls so decayed, that the Light pervaded it in several Places, and, at the Top, I had thro' several Cracks a clear View of the azure Sky : A sordid Bed, covered with Horse-cloths rather than Blankets, and a Rug that had received many a gorgeous party-coloured Patch,

Patch, which *seemed to speak Variety of Wretchedness*; a Grate, consisting of three worn-out crooked Bars; a Chair or two without Backs, and a Table, which, of a Foot, was lame, and

*Thrust between the limping Leg a sherd;
So was the mended Board exactly rear'd:*

composed the Furniture. I expressed my Discontent to the *Chamberlain*, who, scratching his Head, with a burlesque Air, told me, few Gentlemen had a better Room at first; but, no doubt, when I became acquainted with the Custom of that Place, I might remove more to my Satisfaction. I found by this I had made a Mistake; so I tipped him Half a Crown, and promised him half a Guinea more, if I could have a better on the Morrow: He bowed, and very obligingly told me, he would see what he could do for me.

The next Morning I rose early, not having slept the whole Night, partly from the Badness of my Lodging, and partly from the incessant Noises of drunken disorderly Prisoners, who all Night long raked about and quarrelled in the adjacent Galleries. *Now to explore my Prison*, and indeed a more gloomy Prospect, methought, I had never seen before. I was met by the Doctor I had supped with the over Night, who shewed me all its Avenues, and read me a long Lecture, to convince me how necessary Exercise was in this Place to preserve Health; particularly recommending *Fives* for that Purpose, at which I soon understood the Doctor was a Dabster, and partly got his Living by it.

To a thinking Man, who exercises his reasoning Faculties, nothing can be more irksome than such a miserable State of Existence as this in a Goal, and however Necessity, or Avarice and Dishonesty, may form a Kind of artificial Ease and

and Tranquillity in some Breasts, yet Signs of Horror and Regret will sometimes break forth from them, whether they give Way to it or no. Can there be a more horrible Situation, than to labour under this *civil Impediment*, and to reflect that you are cut off from the Race of Mankind, as a Destroyer of your Neighbour's Property, and as it were buried *quick* from all Remembrance ! Dreadful Thought ! which can be equalled by none but those of the remorseless *Creditor*, who under the Sanction of Laws, too much abused, shall daily, hourly, become the Tortures of some unhappy honest Family, whose Misfortunes only have rendered them insolvent : Yet such there are, who, in our Church Service every Day still repeat, *Forgive us our Debts, as we forgive our Debtors*. Blasphemous Impiety ! execrable Murderers ! wisely has the Legislature, from Time to Time, relieved, at certain Periods, the suffering guiltless Creature from these merciless Bonds !

In the *Fleet*, I found Persons of all Ranks, all Professions, and almost all Religions, and there can be no Loss of agreeable Companions for Men of every Taste. Some have taken Shelter here to save the Fortunes for themselves or their Heirs, which ought to be given up to the ruined Creditors ; numberless Families suffering by such Villainies : Others have been caught, and fixed here, after a Train of successful Rogueries, bringing in the Spoils of Hundreds ; but the greatest Number are those unhappy Ones I hinted at before, whose Case is greatly, sincerely to be pitied. The honest Man here droops and pines, Despair and Death are seen in his Face, and he deploras his Misfortunes ! The others lose in a Round of Drinking, Riot, and Debauchery, all Sense of Shame and all Compunction for their Crimes, and make their Prison a veritable *Hell* to those about them, more serious, more composed.

Just Heaven! when will the blissful Time arrive, that Man, thy Substitute below, shall cease to tear and rend his Fellow-creature! shall cease to be designing, cruel, base, and act in every Thing consistent with his Nature and his Make! Lions, their Fellow-lions ne'er devour, and Tigers love their Kind! Each Savage, prouling thro' the howling Desert, with fiery Eyes and baneful Glare, in Search of needful Prey, still spares his Likeness, wars not on his Brother; but Man, ungrateful for the every Blessing thou hast on him bestowed, with ruthless Ravages deforms his Soul, and triumphs in his Neighbour's Wretchedness; nor feels the pitying Thought, nor sheds the melting Tear, for other's Woes!

When Dinner time arrived, Sir *William* accosted me upon the *Bare*, acquainting me, there was a very good Ordinary in the Cellar, at which himself, with some other very sociable Gentlemen, usually dined, and hoped, that I would let them have the Pleasure of my Company to Dinner. I, for my Part, had neither Thought of Eating or Drinking yet, and was taken up in many melancholy Reflections upon my forlorn Estate, and the Unhappiness and the Succession of Misfortunes that seemed to attend me, at every Step in Life; but this Invitation awaked me from my Reverie, and made me perceive the Calls of Nature were strongly struggling within me, and I attended him to a Room in the Cellar, where our Meal was elegant and cheap, and the Company really deserved Encomium; save that Wit had here unbounded Licence, and shook off all the Restraints of Modesty and Decency. However, I was not disposed to be very *Cynical*, and promised to dine there every Day, so long as the same good Company frequented it.

C H H P. XXXVIII.

Gets another Apartment.—Meets Speculist.—Becomes extravagant.—Loses Money at Fives.—is quarrelled with at the Dragon-Club.—Fights his Antagontst upon the Bare, and beats him—Is in great Distress.—Makes away with his Clothes by Degrees.

NEXT Morning, the *Chamberlain*, eager to handle the Half-piece I had offered him, helped me to an airy and commodious Room fronting the *Bare*, where I gave a little Treat to Sir *William*, the *Doctor*, and two or three other Members of the Ordinary. I was going up to it in the Afternoon, when I met, at the End of the Gallery, *Speculist*, full-butt, who made a Stand, and burst out into an immoderate Fit of Laughter, crying out Mr. *Thompson*, whoever thought of seeing you at *College* ! Come, my Friend, let us sacrifice all our old Animosities, and, since Fortune has put us into the same Situation, let's live as sociable as we can, and endeavour to do one another all the little Services that are requisite in this Place. I was not Proof against the good Humour with which he uttered this, and gave him my Hand ; for I thought it in vain to stand out, as every Minute would fling us in one another's Way, and I was ever an Enemy to an implacable Temper ; tho' I silently resolved in myself to keep as great a Distance as I well could, and to converse with him in the most cautious Manner. So I went with him to his Room, which was on the same Floor, after he had visited mine, which I found to be one of the best in the House, and superbly furnished. Here I drank a Dram with him,
and

and parted. I soon found I had got into a Set of Company that made it impossible for me to live frugally, and, tho' our Eating daily was so reasonable, yet the Want of something else to employ Time, and the vivacious Mirth of the Table, generally kept us over the Bottle or Bowl till pretty late, and I soon got an Habit of going to the Clubs that were held almost in every Part of the Prison, where I seldom came off for less than Half a Crown at a Sitting, and sometimes not for double the Money. I engaged also at *Fives*, very frequently, which fleeced me of a good deal of Money, having generally my Masters in the Game to deal with; so that my small Stock in less than six Weeks Time was pretty much exhausted, and I began to fear it would not last me so long as was needful; which gave me the bitterest Pangs, as I saw daily Instances of the excessive Misery of Poverty in this Prison, where Money, and Money only, engages Respect, and the Services and Civilities of your Fellow-prisoners. I admitted of no Visits, but *Briks's*, who I made promise not to let his Master know where I was till he came to Town; and as to my Father and Mr. *Diaper*, I wrote to them as usual, so that they had no Suspicion of what had happened. I was here in a constant Round of Company and Diversions, of one Sort or another, which I eagerly pursued, fearing the Return of my Grievs and melancholy Despondency, if I indulged in the least my Reflections on my dearest *Louisa*, who still was uppermost, when I did not use Art to stifle my Remembrance of her. Things were in this Situation, when one Evening, at the *Dragon-club* in the Cellar, I had a Dispute with Captain *Bully*, late an Officer in a marching Regiment, who attacked me very uncivilly, for having said, that Swearing in common Conversation was a very ungentle-

ungentleman-like Behaviour. The Captain was a Brute and a Blockhead; but had reigned Conqueror in all the *Athletic* Trials of Skill he had been engaged in, so that he was the Terror, and, at the same Time, the May-game of all his Fellow-prisoners. Damn you, Sir, says he, who made you a Reformer here? I will swear, Sir, and I am a Gentleman, that my Commission will declare. Captain, I replied, I meant nothing personal, but still I must insist on what I said before, and am sorry to see there is any body so stupid as to contradict me. Stupid! G-d d-n me, what do you mean by that? No more stupid than yourself; I believe I have had as good Education too, and will read *Greek* with you, or any Thing else, for what you dare; at this the whole Company fell into a Laugh, which encouraged me to lay him a Wager that he could not read *English*. A Book was brought, and he attempted to read, but the Wager was given against him; and, upon my saying somewhat further, he took up a Glass, and flung it full at me, which, by ducking my Head, avoided, and challenged me out upon the *Bare*. I had no Mind for this porterly Exercise, but, as amongst School-boys, so here I was sensible a Man would be pissed upon by every one that refused such a Challenge; so, being heartened by all present, I stripped, and went to the Field of Action, where my Antagonist was gone before me. *Speculist*, upon this Occasion, behaved exceeding well, and insisted upon being my Second. A Ring was formed, and now, being stripped in Buff, we stood for some Time lowering Defiance at each other, like two furious Bulls contending for the Mastership of the Pasture. At length we advance with more than mortal Fury, and the resounding Blows thunder upon our Breasts with repeated Force. My Antagonist I soon
found

found was inferior to me in Strength, but superior in Skill ; upon which I endeavoured to close with him, but all in vain ; he baffled my every Attempt, and a Blow, I received over my Temples, sent me senseless to the Earth ; but, soon recovered, I fought aloof till I had gained Breath, when, darting at once Head and Hands into the Pit of his Stomach, I laid him sprawling, and, to complete the Stroke, fell with all my Weight upon him. It was some Time before he came to himself, but so dismayed and weakened with his unlooked for Fall, that now I closed with him with Ease, but did not at first put forth my utmost Strength ; and presently the sanguinary Streams ran from all Parts of our Bodies, and *Victory* seemed to hover in Suspence to whom she should give the Day ; when, suddenly, grasping him closely in my Arms, I raised him up, as *Hercules* did *Antæus*, and dashed him with such Force to the Ground, that he lay without Sense and Motion, nor could again resume the Fight. The Croud around hailed my Conquest with loud Shouts, and rung my Praises through the *Bare* ; some shook me by the Hand, others clapped me upon the Back, and all expressed the highest Satisfaction to behold the haughty *Bully* thus discomfited, and *Hockly in the Hole*, and *Tottenham-Court*, yielded the Day to invincible *Yorkshire*. My Bruises were not very troublesome, and I soon recovered my pristine Vigour, and could now walk or talk without Molestation, all my Fellow-prisoners allowing me a *Cock of the Game*.

I fell soon from this Height into the most direful Distress ; my Money was gone, and now I employed, for some Time, one of the Runners to carry, from Time to Time, my Clothes, Watch, and other valuable Things, to the Pawnbrokers, to support Life. I had most of my
Things

Things from my Lodgings, and a few Weeks stripped me to one Coat, two Shirts, a Pair of Breeches, Stockings, and Shoes ; but still I kept up some Appearances, and frequented the usual Clubs. I was obliged to refrain even that in a few Days longer, and could go no more to the Ordinary, having already a Score at the Tap, of which the Landlord gave me many mortifying Items. I shouled about and picked up a Dinner here and there, in the Prison ; and more than a score Times have gone the whole Day without Nourishment ; so that I became a mere Skeleton. I once kept to my Room, and, for a whole Week, or ten Days, lived upon Bread and Water, obstinately resolving not to impart my Distress to any one, but to wait with Patience till my Father's Arrival, which I now expected in a very little Time, the Plaintiff having *declared* against me, and refusing all Terms of Accommodation. And at this Time my former Grievances revived in my Mind, with redoubled Impetuosity ; and my *Louisa*, sleeping or waking, haunted my Soul, and swam before my Eyes, in all her torturing, lovely Charms ; but *Louisa* lost and gone for ever ! I had no Sports or Company to divert my cruel Reflections ; and all my old Associates, perceiving the Game was up with me, forsook me, without vouchsafing even to speak to me, when we met. *Speculist*, indeed, two or three Times, invited me to Dinner ; but I was not so far reconciled to Baseness, as to accept any further Favours of a Man, I could not but recollect so many mortifying Occurrences of. Often a Bisket and a Dram of Geneva, together with the Water from the Pumps, made my Repast for four and twenty Hours, and I wished earnestly for Death, to hide my Shame, and terminate my Grief and Miseries at once.

C H A P. XXXIX.

A Digression.—Speculist taken ill.—His Behaviour on his Death-bed.—Dies.—An unexpected Visitor arrives, and enquires for Thompson.—The affecting Interview between them.—His Father and Diaper come to him.—He is set at Liberty.—Takes Leave of his Fellow-prisoners.

SURE no Condition can be more calamitous, more to be pitied, than that of an unfortunate Wretch under Confinement for Debt! His Friends, tired with his importunate Requests for Relief, forsake him, and abandon him to his Fate, with bitter Censures on his Indiscretions and Follies; his Enemies, knowing themselves secure from his Resentments, load him with all the bitter Invectives that wanton Pride, and hellish Malice, can inspire; his incensed Creditors, fired with their Injuries, are too apt to think his Punishment just, and, arrogantly assuming to themselves the Authority of Heaven, call down Vengeance, and inflict Tortures, unceasing Tortures, on his Head; not reflecting, that the *Saviour of the World* has most authoritatively recommended Charity and Kindness to the Prisoner, as one of those Virtues by which we merit Happiness hereafter: —*I was sick, and in Prison, and ye visited me* — What a pathetic Sentence! and how truly worthy the Divine Lips that spoke it! If Benevolence is due to our Fellow-creatures in general. how much more so is it to that Part of them who are thus exiled from the Community, and for a Misfortune, perhaps, rather than a Fault, as is the Case of Numbers, doomed to a melancholy Gloom, shut up

up with relentless Walls and Bars, without the Means to support even there the wretched Remains of Life!

—————Take Physic Pomp:

*Expose thyself to feel what Wretches feel;
That thou may'st shake the Superflux to them,
And shew the Heavens more just.*—————

SHAKESPEAR.

Oh! I have seen, and have sickened at the horrid Sight, Numbers of Wretches, capable of being useful, in the highest Degree, to the Public, secluded from all the Privileges of Men and Christians, *pale Famine* wasting them away by slow Degrees, and grievous *Oppression* grinding them to Death! These are the greater Number that fill our English Prisons, and every Minute, with bitter Anguish, curse the Hour they were born, and invoke an End of their wretched Beings. Let us look abroad: Do *Turks*, or *Infidels*, thus treat their Debtors?—Is it necessary here, when the wise *Hollanders*, the Glory of Commerce, find it otherwise there, and every Christian Country seems to act by contrary Maxims! Oh! *Britain!* thou Land of Liberty! How canst thou view Disgrace like this, and suffer many Thousands to be torn from useful Labour, Arts, and Sciences, for Ills, the Lot of Human Race, or unwary Indiscretions! Lives there a Man, who, kindly sympathizing, pities Human Woes, who gives the quick Reliefs to wasting Sorrow! all humane, great, and good, the Pride, the Glory, of his native Country, who feels for suffering Merit's deep Distress! Lives there a *Lyttleton*, who softly bends, and lends his ready Ear to every Tale big with Calamity! And are these Things still so? Rise *Cornewall*,
Ogelsborpe,

Ogelthorpe, and all the generous Band of Patriot Souls, and see Mankind redressed !

Mr. *Speculift*, about this Time, was taken ill with a malignant Fever, which carried off a great Number of the Prisoners, and, before I heard of it, was out of all Hopes of Recovery. One Morning, a Man, who waited upon him, came to tell me that Mr. *Speculift* wanted to have a little Conversation with me ; at the same Time letting me know, that it was the first Interval of Reason he had had for some Time, having been constantly delirious, ever since the Distemper seized him. I made what Haste I could, and found the poor Creature so changed, that he was hardly to be known ; the *Fire* and *Hauteur* of his Countenance, that *Fierte*, so visible in him, was now extinct, and he lay with hollow Eyes, and palid, meagre Face, gasping, as it were for Breath. The Sight shocked me ; and, notwithstanding all the former Reasons I had to be angry with him, I could hardly refrain from shedding Tears. He reached his feeble Hand, quite cold and clammy, to me, and begged me to sit down for a few Minutes, which I did, and he thus addressed me :

Mr. *Thompson*, I see you are touched to see me thus ; and you can't help making some Reflections on the Differenne between my former Appearance and my present. I shall die,——of that I am assured, and all the Philosophy I thought myself Master of, will not support my Spirits in this dreadful Moment ! Oh ! Time, how have I abused you, and all the precious Gifts Providence has kindly bestowed upon me ! Here a rending Sigh heaved his Breast, and a Tear or two, all the Moisture left in his Brain, trickled down his withered Cheeks. Oh ! my Friend, he continued, could I recal my Days again, I should, I think, despise and hate the odious Ways I have followed :
How

How has Vanity, and a Desire of Applause, tempted me to dispute those Truths, which the Conviction of my Mind, per Force, would still make me inly acknowledge! How have my Hours been spent, how idly, unprofitably, and how wickedly! and, alas! the Consequences are bitter Pangs, despairing Groans, and Fears of what may come hereafter; for,

*If there is a Pow'r above us,
(And that there is all Nature cries aloud
Through all her Works) he must delight in Virtue;
And that which he delights in must be happy.*

I would pray,—but I am convinced my present Circumstances will be the Inducement; and I fear a Death-Bed Repentance will be of no Avail! Oh! how extreme are my Tortures, and the Wounds of my Conscience are not to be healed! Could I this Minute make Reparation for all the Injustices, Cruelties, and Wrongs, I have acted towards my Fellow-creatures, for I have been a most abandoned Monster of Vice, I should then with some Confidence, apply to the Throne of Grace, *for Mercy, in Time of Need*: but, alas! I am taken, as the Poet expresses it, *unnuzzled, disappointed, unanealed*, with all my Crimes staring me full in the Face, and bearing me down to the bottomless Pit, *where shall be Weeping and Gnashing of Teeth*. My Friend, take Warning by me, and never affront your good Sense so much, or the Sentiments of your Mind, as to join in Scenes of Riot and Debauchery, and run such base Lengths, for the Gratification of those Appetites and Passions, which should be constantly governed by Religion and Reason; then, in the Hour when your Soul is separating from its earthly Mansion, you may have

have the exceeding great Consolation of applying, by such Acts of Devotion as are the Manna of the Mind, to that God, who never forsakes those who love him, in the Time of their Tribulation; and not, like me, be doomed a Prey to Anguish, Fear, and Doubt, dreading, yet longing, to exist again, and lost in wild and endless Mazes of exploring Wretchedness! Here his Spirits would hold out no longer, and he fell into his usual Delirium, with such strong Convulsions, that I doubted not he was in his last Agonies. Poor, unhappy Man! I wept at his Condition, and, by an involuntary Motion, fell on my Knees, at the Side of his Bed, and put up earnest Petitions for Mercy and Compassion from the offended Author of his Being, in Terms that surprized every Body about us; and, before I rose, he was no more!——but gave up the Ghost, a placid Smile being visible on his Countenance.

This was the End of poor *Speculist*, a Man, who, if he had rightly managed his great Talents, would have been a Blessing to his Friends, and an Ornament to his Country; but overbearing Vanity and Lust brought him thus to a gloomy Prison, and, by an infectious Distemper, caught there, to an untimely Grave! May that be the End of his Sufferings.

I had fulfilled near three Months in this Confinement, where every Thing conspired, with my Sorrows, to rob me entirely of any Relish for Life; and was now reduced to so sad a State, that my remaining Cloaths hardly sufficed to cover my Nakedness, and my Toes peeped thro' the yawning Chasms Time had made in my Shoes; so that I could not stir out of my Room, and was almost starved. In this Dilemma, all my Woes returned upon me with repeated Violence; and, having no Books of any Account left, my Time was spent
merely

merely in the most bitter Reflections, and the most cruel Sighings and Groanings of an afflicted Spirit. Sometimes I vented my Sorrows in poetic Strains where I endeavoured to warble forth my Complaints, and the Beauties of my adorable *Louisa*; nothing giving the Soul a greater Turn to Numbers, than so melancholy, so tender a Situation as I was in. Amongst many such Essays, I have selected the following, which will truly picture the Condition of my Mind at this Time:

I.

Was ever Maid so form'd to please,
As sweet *Louisa*, Heavenly Fair?
Whose Smiles could howling Tortures ease,
And calm the Soul's most deep Despair.

II.

Wheree'er she mov'd, untainted Joys,
All gladsome, wanton'd, in her Train;
And ribbald Nonsense, riot Noise,
Exil'd, forsook the blissful Plain.

III.

Fierce, tho' the Flames her Charms inspir'd,
Where all the blooming Graces rov'd;
Her Mind's Perfection's more admir'd;
Ev'n *Reason* bow'd, obey'd, and lov'd!

IV.

Such Thoughts! such Sentiments refin'd!
Ne'er mov'd a Female Breast before;
And sparkling Wit, soft Beauty join'd,
Compell'd sage *Wisdom* to adore.

V.

Ah! then what sorrowing Strains can tell
The bitter Anguish I endure!
Who can my Pangs, my Grievs, reveal!
What my tormented Bosom cure!

VI.

For ah ! the radiant Angel, torn
 From these fond Arms, to Heaven aspires !
 And, doom'd to ceaseless Woe ! I mourn
 My hopeless, ineffectual Fires !

VII.

Hail ! then, the Dungeon's darksome Gloom !
 Hail ! Horrors ! Miseries ! and Cares !
 Since *Lucy* in the silent Tomb,
 Commands my Groans, excites my Tears.

VIII.

No more glad Day shall gaily shine !
 No more shall balmy Comfort chear !
 But musing Sadness shall be mine !
 And pensive Moans, and Pains sincere !

IX.

Come, friendly *Death*, to mortal Grief !
 Tho' dreaded, yet a welcome Guest !
 Ah ! give a suffering Wretch Relief,
 And ease the Youth's afflicted Breast !

X.

Oh ! then, to Fields, to Floods of Light !
 My raptured Soul shall blissful stray ;
 And, all resplendent, glorious, bright !
Louisa meet me on my Way.

Whilst I was one Day busied in this Manner, I heard my Name repeated by a well-known Female Voice, in the Gallery, several Times, which, for my Soul, I could not believe to be any other than my Mother's ; and nothing can equal the Shock that the Thought gave me ! The Voice approached my Ears, nearer and nearer ; and at length, one of the Common-side Prisoners, opening the Door of my Room, said, That's the Gentleman's Room, Madam, you enquired for, and you'll find him within. Gracious God ! 'twas she, 'twas the

the dear Woman herself, who, advancing a few Paces, and, at the same Time, shutting the Door with one Hand, no sooner discovered the meagre, wretched Figure, her Son, than she uttered a loud Cry, and fell back in a Swoon, in a Chair that stood behind her. Sufficiently roused from my stupid Lethargy, I flew to her, and raising her Head, reclined it on my Bosom, whilst a Flood of Tears flowed from my Eyes; and all I could pronounce was, now and then, in the Intervals of my convulsive Emotions, Dear Madam,—Heaven!—What do I behold! She soon came to herself, and fastening her Arms about my Neck, wept bitterly; oft repeating, My Son! my Son! What Wretchedness to see thee thus! Oh! What, what have you done, to bring you here? I fell on my Knees, and grasping her Hand, begged her to calm herself, and I would relate all my Story; but your sudden, unexpected, surprizing Arrival, has filled me with such Wonder and Astonishment, that it will be some Time before I can command myself, so much as to talk any Thing sensible: My Amazement, dear Madam, has even turned my Brain; and, indeed, so it had: I was not prepared for such an Incident, which, had I thought of all the Improbabilities in Life, would never have entered my Thoughts, and puzzled me so to account for, that my Head ran round, as it were upon Wheels, with a Velocity, that took from me all steady Thinking, for some considerable Time. I called the Man in who still waited without; and my dear Mother sent him for a Bottle of Wine, of which, when I had drank a Glass or two, for nothing but Water had entered my Lips that Day before, I was revived enough to talk, and my Mother had acquired Spirits enough to hear me. The first Question I asked was, about my

Father's Health, who she assured me was very well, and that they arrived in *London* the Day before, and went immediately to Mr. *Diaper's* Country house, apprehending they should meet with me there ; for I had not let them know where I lodged in any of my Letters, and they had forgot to enquire of Mr. *Archer* and Mr. *Sbarpley*, before they set out, who could have informed them. Mr. *Diaper*, overjoyed to see them, came with them to Town ; and as he knew where I lodged, in *Red-lion-Street*, carried them directly there ; but no Surprize could exceed theirs, when, upon knowing who they were, my Landlord informed them I was a Prisoner in the *Fleet-Prison*. My Father, after indulging, with my Mother and Mr. *Diaper*, all the Grief such News could occasion, enquired if he knew on what Account I had gone there, and had kept it a Secret from all my Friends so long ; but he could not satisfy them, and directed them to the *Spunging-house*, where I was carried after my Arrest, and there they came to a Knowledge of my Plaintiff, the Nature of the Debt, and every Thing else that could give them a thorough Insight into the Affair ; at which my Father and Master were so concerned, that they could hardly utter a Word for a long Time. From thence they waited on Mr. *Vulture* and he was so generous as to own that he believed I had never received a Penny Satisfaction for my Note from Mr. *Deacon* ; but that it was the unguarded Mistake of a Youth, who he would not have been so severe with, if he could have afforded to stay any longer for his Money ; but as he did not know, nor I care to tell him, where my Relations lived, he found it necessary to arrest me, to secure the Payment of it. Mr. *Diaper* who knew him, and who was known to *Vulture*, blamed him highly for not
letting

letting him know the Affair, when he would have bailed me, and not suffered me to undergo the Disgrace and Pain of Imprisonment; but he excused himself, by saying, That he could not imagine so much Friendship had existed between us as that came to. Then they talk'd to Mr. *Deacon's* Brother, but could not bring him at all to Reason, tho' my Father talked of commencing a Suit in Equity, to recover the Money; and demonstrated, that I could not possibly be any Thing in his Brother's Debt. *Vulture* was applied to again after this, to know if he'd come to any Composition; but he excused himself, by saying he had been the whole Money out of Pocket so long, that he had been a great Loser; however, in Compliment to Mr. *Diaper*, he would deduct the Fees and Law Charges, and give me a Discharge on the Receipt of the 600*l*. Mr. *Diaper*, and your Father, continues this dearest Mother are now in the *Lodge* paying your Fees, and setting you at Liberty; having paid *Vulture* the Sum, upon the Note, this Morning betimes; but my Dear, you are quite altered; I never thought I should see my *Joey* in such a Place! or such an Habit! She had just finished these Words, when in rushed my Father and Mr. *Diaper*: If they expressed all the Joy imaginable to see me again, the forlorn Condition I appeared in gave them the utmost Torment; and my Father and he both, tho' very tenderly chid me for not acquainting them sooner with this Matter, and writing for the proper Support for my Necessities, whilst I was here. Look ye, my Son, tho' you have acted so sillily, so unguardedly, in this Affair of the Note, says my Father, yet, as I believe you was swayed by Gratitude to my old Friend, poor Mr. *Deacon*, to do what you did, and cannot be accused of any Thing

but Folly and Inattention, in not taking a proper counter Security of him, I shall make you no Reproaches, and hope your future Conduct will were off any Stain your Imprisonment may have occasioned ; but now we have got you discharged, and you are at Liberty to go, your Figure is so rueful, that you can't appear till Dark ; but says my Master, I fancy, Sir, a little Money will redeem Mr *Thompson's* Clothes sufficient to appear in ; for I suppose he has not sold them, but committed them to the Custody of some *Pawnbroker* ; to this I answered in the Affirmative ; upon which my dear Father gave me Ten Guineas, and I immediately sent the Runner, I used to employ, for my Clothes, whilst they satisfied their Curiosity in visiting the Prison, the Bare, the Coffee-Room, &c. and then I got shaved and dressed, and appeared before them like myself. We bespoke Dinner in the Cellar ; and my Fellow-prisoners, hearing of my Discharge, thronged into the Room to wish me Joy, which I returned, desiring them to drink a Glass of Wine ; and presenting them to my Father, to whom, when I had informed him of their several Characters, he ordered me to make some Presents, if I thought proper ; accordingly I did so, where I knew it would be acceptable ; and gave in his Name and Mr. *Diaper's* a considerable Sum to the Begging-grate. Amongst the rest poor Sir *William Failer*, came to congratulate me ; but my Father had no sooner fixed his Eyes upon him, than he ran to embrace him ; and they exchanged such mutual Civilities, as quite surprized me. And is this your Son ? cried Sir *William* ; I wish I had known it sooner, how happy should I have been ! My Father, who I soon perceived had a great Regard for him, asked him, How long he had been there ? He said, Near two Years, for a Debt of

401. Good God ! said my Father, is it possible !
Tempora mutantur & nos mutamur in illis ! Ah ! my
 old Chum, replies Sir *William*, little did I think
 some Years ago, ever to see this Place ; but *jaſta*
eſt alea.——

——*Quæque ipſe miſerrima vidi ;*
Et quorum pars magna fui !——

After ſome other Diſcourſe, relative to Sir *Wil-*
liam's Affairs, my Father invited him to Dinner ;
 and, that over, called him on one Side, and made him
 a Preſent of ten Guineas, which he received with a
 grateful Tranſport : Then taking Leave of all my
 Acquaintance, and clearing all my Scores and Debts
 in the Place, I once more launched out in the open
 Air, and immediately, with theſe three dear and
 much-loved Perſons ſet out for Mr. *Diaper's* Coun-
 try-Houſe. Mrs. *Diaper*, at my Arrival, overcame
 me almoſt with Careſſes ; but, when ſhe had
 heard my Story, ſhe liſted up her Hands and Eyes ;
 and ſaid, if her Son was to know it, ſhe believed
 he would go diſtracted ! and blamed me greatly
 for not acting with more Regard to myſelf, by
 letting my Friends know my Diſtreſs ; declaring
 ſhe would have made away with her Plate, if it
 could not have been done without, rather than
 have ſuffered me to continue in Priſon a Minute.
 At Supper, talking about the Place we juſt came
 from, I acquainted Mr. *Diaper* with the Death of
 poor *Speculiſt*, and the Manner of it, which oc-
 caſioned a great many curious and uſeful Reſlecti-
 ons, on all Hands ; but what moſt ſurprizes me,
 is to ſee Sir *William Failer* ſo deſtitute of Friends,
 ſays my Father ; tho' indeed, when we come to
 conſider all Things, it is not ſo ſtrange neither ;
 for he has, to be ſure, been a very indiſcreet and
 D 4 unhappy

happy Man; and the Passages I recollect of his Life, are a remarkable Lesson of Prudence to Mankind. I asked him to relate what he knew of that Gentlemen, which, being backed by Mr. *Diaper*, and the two Ladies, he did immediately to the following Effect:

C H A P. XL.

History of Sir William Failer, Bart.

MY Acquaintance with this Gentleman commenced at the *University*, where he was at that Time a Student, as well as myself; Sir *William* being of *Emanuel*, and I of *St. John's*; and has been continued, till within nine or ten Years; when his various Misfortunes and Distresses so altered him, that he sought other Friends, of a different Stamp from those he before associated with. You will observe, in the Anecdotes I am going to give you of this Gentleman's History, that the greatest Talents, the finest Opportunities of rising in Life, are of no Avail, if a little wordly Prudence, or Care to keep up Appearances, and a little Self-interest also, for a little is undoubtedly laudable, mingle not in our Actions.

Sir *William* was descended from a collateral Branch of one of the noblest and most antient Families, in the North of *Scotland*; the Heads of which, being dipped in a late Rebellion against the Prince on the Throne, were obliged to forsake their native Country, but, however, at present, make the brightest military Figure in a neighbouring Government; one of them being allowed to be as consummate a *General Officer* as any in *Europe*. He was tall, and well made, had a great
deal

deal of Vivacity and Spirit, and a finished Education, which, I assure you, you now but see the Remains of : His Name and Family brought him into the World, with great Advantages ; and tho' his paternal Estate was very small, he might from his Knowledge of the World, and Adroitness in the Management of public Affairs, have expected very great Encouragement from the People then at the Helm in the latter End of the Reign of her late Majesty Queen *Anne* ; but just as he came to *London*, for good, she died ; and those Friends, who were likely to assist his Rise, were out of Play. Soon after he stood Candidate to represent his native Borough in *Parliament*, but was opposed by a Courtier of great Distinction, who, by procuring a Number of honorary Freemen to be made, carried the Election against him ; upon which Sir *William* petitioned the House, and had such flagrant Proofs of Bribery and Corruption to produce, that it was thought proper not to suffer him to be heard ; and the very Night before the Hearing came on, he was seized by a Messenger, and confined by an Order from the *Secretary of State*. Sir *William* was examined to certain Interrogatories, several Times by my Lord T—— ; but behaved with a Spirit and Firmness that surprized that sagacious Nobleman, who, from this Behaviour, commenced a very warm Friendship for him, and recommended him to another great Man, who promoted him to a lucrative Employ in one of our *West-India Colonies*, where he might have made himself rich and happy, could he have sacrificed his Honour and Conscience to Views of Interest, as to many employed in public Affairs do. A large Sum of Money came into his Hands, by Way of Forfeitures, for which his Predecessors never used to account ; but Sir *William*, full of the Patriot, and fraught with the sublime Principles of disinterested Love of the

Public, refused to follow their Example, and wrote for Order to remit it into the *Treasury*. The Minister wrote him a kind Letter, in which he told him, he thought he had as much Right to the Money, as other Persons in his Office had, and advised him to say no more of the Matter ; but he could not stomach this, and accordingly remitted the Money, which was safely received ; and what Use was made of it, the Public never came to the Knowledge of ; but I remember, when Sir *William* afterwards came to *England*, and applied to the same great Minister for some *pecuniary* Favours, he laughed in his Face, and told him, He had it once in his Power to make his Fortune, by keeping what perhaps, was dissipated amongst a Parcel of Scoundrels ; so openly did that Minister acknowledge the Corruption in which he dealt, and of which, indeed he was truly the Father. In this Colony he became enamour'd of the beauteous *Matilda*, a Widow Lady, of large Possessions, whom attacking with all the Advantages of Person and Power, he soon made a Conquest of, and married ; but this Marriage was far from being so agreeable to Sir *William*, as he imagined it would ; and, the *Honey-moon* over, he found his Lady stiff, morose, a great Devotee, and, even in the Arms of her Husband, uttering extempore Prayers, and doing every Thing according to the Maxims of Soul-seeking and Saving Grace ; Terms which Sir *William* had as little Notion of the Efficacy of, as he had of the *Pope's* Supremacy. In vain he endeavoured to conquer this devout Humour ; she was a *Presbyterian* of the most finished Cast ; and, for an Oath, or profane Word, used in Passion, would deprive him of her Bed and Company for a Month. One Day, I, amongst others, after his Return to *London*, dined with him ; it happened to be on a
Sunday,

Sunday, and, after Dinner, my Lady went to the *Meeting*; as usual. Sir *William* had been praising a Parcel of *Madeira* very highly, but, when he came to look for the Key of his Cellar, found my Lady had carried it with her. This was a Trick she had often served him, to prevent his profaning the *Sabbath*; and he had as constantly vowed to be even with her. He had a Footman, a stout Fellow, whom he ordered immediately to assist him in taking the Cellar Door off the Hinges; which done, he laid it upon his Shoulders, and saw him himself bear it into the *Meeting-house*, which was not at a great Distance, where he carried it to his Lady's Pew, and, flinging it down, told her his Master had sent the Cellar Door to unlock, since she would not leave the Key at Home. My Lady screamed out; the Preacher was forced to stop in the Midst of his Discourse, the Hubbub was so great; and, mean Time, one of the Elders was turning the Footman out of Doors; when Sir *William* appeared, and hallooed out, Look ye, Madam, your affected Godliness is not to deprive me of my Wine, give him the Keys directly, or we'll carry you in Procession upon our Shoulders, and make you unlock it at Home. My Lady found she was not joked with, so gave the Key; but never came Home afterwards; and they parted by mutual Consent, Sir *William* surrendering up to her Use, and that of her Children, by a former Husband, all her Fortune. Some Years after, growing out at Elbows, he solicited for, and obtained a Government in *North America*, in which he behaved with Satisfaction to the Government at Home, and to the Ease and Benefit of the People under his Command, for fifteen Years; but was thrown out by a Faction, and came Home as poor as ever. Now he applied all his Talents to drawing up Schemes for the Use of the Ministry,

try, in which he met with great Encouragement from General *Commodus* and Sir *Houghton Hall*; the first of them a Patron of great Integrity and Credit, and generous even to a Fault; the other as remarkable for his extensive Power at the Helm. Several of his Schemes were put in Execution, and he made shift, from the Largeſſes that were beſtowed upon him, to keep the beſt Company, and to ſupport a tolerable Equipage. Undoubtedly no Man in *England* underſtood better the Intereſt of his Mother Country, or that of thoſe numerous and beneficial Dependents upon her in *America*; but that Prime Miniſter being forced to reſign and retire, he was for ſome Time unemployed, and, having contracted large Debts, for Sir *William* was far from being an Oeconomist in his own Affairs, he was ſeveral Times arreſted, and conſigned to loathſome Priſons, whence he was generally relieved by ſome of his worthy Patrons. He now turned public Writer, and for ſome Time plied the Quill with great Succeſs; but, that yielding him but a ſlender Supply, he grew ſcandalouſly guilty of borrowing ſmall Sums of every one he met, and an unfortunate ſecond Marriage, together with this ſad Habit, hurt his Reputation greatly; which was the more to be pitied, as he now advanced apace into Years. His Diſtreſs was told to the generous *Commodus*, who with a princely Generoſity made him a Preſent of Five hundred Pounds, to pay off his troubleſome Creditors; but he did not know who he had to deal with, Sir *William* ought to have been Maſter of 10,000 a Year, according to the Dictates of his natural Temper. He left *Commodus* full of Gratitude, and haſtened to an Ordinary to regale himſelf, not having made an hearty Meal for ſome Days; and who ſhould he ſee there but the unfortunate *Bellarion*, a great unhappy Friend of his, who, after the firſt Compliments,

Compliments, told him a long Story of his present Distresses? Good G-d, cries the Baronet, how happy am I, my dear Friend, to have it in my Power to relieve you? Here, take this Hundred Pound Bank-bill, and make yourself easy; if you want more, call on me To-morrow at my Lodgings; thus he went on, forgetting entirely, in the native Benevolence of his Heart, the excessive Occasion he had for more than the whole himself, and the Intent of its being bestowed upon him; but a Question *Bellarion* put to him a little disconcerted him: He asked him, where it was he lodged? Upon which he blushed, recollecting it was at a blind Chandler's Shop, and, taking a short Leave, hastened Home to pay six Weeks Arrears of Rent that he owed there, before he forgot it. When he came Home, his Landlady's Husband, who was a very honest Fellow, and Father of a numerous Family, he found, by the Wife's Tears and Complaints, was arrested for a Debt of five and twenty Pounds, which would be the total Ruin of him and his Family. Sir *William*'s Heart was not Proof against this Scene of Distress; he cried out in an Extasy, Thank God! I can relieve him! I'll do it this Minute! so pacifying the Woman, and putting a Guinea into her Hands, he went and released her Husband, and brought him Home with him, paying the whole Debt and Charges for him. In short, before the next Week, poor Sir *William* began to fall from all that sudden Elevation this Money had raised his honest Heart to, and was obliged to borrow Half a Crown of a Friend, dine in a Cellar, and soon after was arrested in a small Action, and carried to the *Marshalsea*: Whence, indeed, *Commodus* again released him, but would never see his Face more. After this he pursued certain Schemes, which he had proposed for the Benefit of the City Traders,

of

of which he made a good Deal of Money at Times ; but was frequently interrupted by a Taylor, to whom he owed a considerable Sum of Money, who had put the Cause into the Hands of a pettifogging Scoundrel of a Lawyer. This Lawyer was special poor, and whenever he wanted a new Suit of Cloaths, used to frequent the Coffee-house where Sir *William* used, and that Gentleman never being able to conceal his noble Temper, when he was full of Money, as soon as ever he discovered it, persuaded the Taylor to arrest him, which he no sooner did, than he advised him to take the Charges, and fresh Security for another twelve Months ; so that Sir *William* has been arrested five Times for the same Debt, merely owing to his own Inattention, and the Villainy of the Attorney, who has got as many Suits of Clothes by it ; and I believe it is that very Debt he is now in Durance for. I apprehend, Sir *William* may have been too great a Votary to the fair Sex, and too uncautious in those promiscuous Amours, which may have disoblighd some of his Friends ; but this is certain, by what he hinted to me, that, after having done his Country great Services, some of which he is still unpaid for, and tho' he is still capable of being of great Use, particularly in *America*, and understands the Fishery of *Great Britain* better than any Man in the Kingdom, yet his Application to a great Man only for five Shillings *per diem* has been rejected, and he is in a downright starving Condition, which I think is a Disgrace to our Country. He has put into my Hands the Copy of the very touching Letter he wrote to that great Man, by which one may see the Distress he laboured under ; and I think myself happy that it was in my Power to give him some Assistance. My Father then read the Letter, which was as follows, dated from the *Fleet Prison*.

Right

Right Honourable SIR,

I HAVE now been confined in Prison near five Months, for a Debt under the Value of thirty Pounds ; and, as I do not truly owe fifty pounds besides in the World, I am no ways apprehensive of any other considerable Demand of that Nature.

On my first hearing of the intended settling of —, and by that Means securing an important Barrier to all the Colonies in the Main, as well as encouraging our Trade, both in the Fishery and with the distant *Indians*, I was uneasy that my unhappy Confinement would not permit me to do myself the Honour of waiting on you, in order to acquaint you with a great many Truths, some of which perhaps are yet unknown to you. For, altogether regardless of any particular Advantage that such Information could bring to myself, I most humbly presume to assure you, that, without Dissimulation or Reserve, I shall always take the greatest Pleasure imaginable, in rendering a Person of your amiable Character, and my Country at the same Time, real Service : Acting in such a Manner, having always been my Ambition, as it gave me the greatest Satisfaction in Life, and still affords me, in the present Distress, a quiet, contented Mind.

There are some other Things essential to the Affairs of *America* that I wish could be laid before you ; such as the Nature and Use of a Paper Currency there, the Necessity of putting it under a proper Regulation, and the unavoidable Consequence of utterly ruining our Trade in, and with these Colonies, should it be totally prohibited.

I have

I have likewise some useful Remarks to offer on a proper Encouragement to be given for carrying on both the Herring and Cod Fishery, on the North Coast of *Scotland*; and I should think myself sufficiently rewarded, if any Knowledge or Industry, I am Master of, could but procure me so small an Encouragement as Five Shillings a Day for common Bread; and having now but a very few Years to live, if your Honour will condescend to gratify your own Humanity, by procuring me Liberty, together with such an Allowance for my Subsistence, it will undoubtedly afford you the agreeable Reflection of having saved, from inexpressible Want and Misery,

Right Honourable SIR,

Your Honour's most dutiful,

And ever obedient Servant,

WILLIAM FAILER.

C H A P.

C H A P. XLI.

He persists in his Design of going abroad.—Prig arrives, whom he consults.—Luskily thinks of applying to Mr. Goodwill. — That Gentleman arrives at Mr. Diaper's.—He persuades Mr. Thompson to let his Son go to the East-Indies Mr. Goodwill procures him to be sent as a Factor to Fort St. George.—He takes Leave of the Directors.—Is nobly fitted out for the Voyage.

WE spent three or four Days in this Recess, and I took it so kindly and gratefully, that my Father nor Mr. *Diaper* ever reproached me, or mentioned my late Folly, that I was full of a Sense of their Goodness, which gave me more than usual Inclination to please in every Thing I did ; and I, even for some Time, sacrificed my cruel Regrets, to the Joy and Pleasure I experienced in the Company of these dear Persons. I found Mr. *Diaper* had not yet heard from my Friend again, which did not give us much Uneasiness, as no *Indian Ship* had arrived since he set sail from *Lisbon* ; but, to make us some Amends, we received Letters from Mr. *Bellair* and Miss *Sukey*, accompanied with some Presents to Mrs. *Diaper*, by which we found that Lady and her Brother in the same Sentiments of my Friend, and longing for Advices from him.

Notwithstanding the Ease and Composure, however, that I affected, I was under a good deal of Concern to see my Father and Mr. *Diaper* still in an Humour of settling me in the Business of a Linen Draper, to which I had now lost all Manner of Relish ; and to which the Departure
of

of my Friend had not a little contributed : Besides, the many Accidents that I had met with, the Death of my *Louisa*, together with the Life I had lately led, had given me a Repugnance to a close Application, and a Course of Hurry and Trade. This, tho', was not a making a proper Judgment of Things ; for, in the Execution of my Design of going Abroad, if I had thought only of the common Difficulties that would naturally occur, and the Care I must manage with to bring myself into a wished State of Success, I believe I should have laid it absolutely aside ; but now I saw, I thought a Relief from my Afflictions, in thus shifting the Scene of Action, by the Variety of unusual Objects that would present themselves ; and, in short, my hapless Love had given a romantic Turn to my Mind, which absolutely unhinged me for an Home Employment. I should not have known how to manage in this Dilemma, if good Fortune had not returned Mr. *Prig* to Town, who immediately came down to pay his Compliments to Mr. *Diaper* and us, upon hearing we were altogether. He was received with great Respect by that Gentleman and my Father, to whom I introduced him with particular Expressions of Regard ; but, as for myself, I felt unusual Satisfaction in seeing a Man, who was now my only Bosom Friend, and the Repository of my Secrets.

He was to the last Degree surprized, when he heard of my Imprisonment, and the Affair of Mr. *Deacon* ; but it was his Advice to sit down with the Loss ; for tho', by filing a Bill in *Chancery*, perhaps some Relief might be got, yet the Time it would employ, and the necessary Expences, previous to the obtaining any Satisfaction, would be so great a Discouragement, that we should be heartily sick and tired, before it would
be

be terminated. My Father, who was an Enemy to long and tedious Litigations, upon these Advices, agreed to let the Affair drop, telling me, with a great deal of good Humour, that he would look upon it as a Debt due to him, from me, whenever I was able to pay him.

When I could conveniently do it, I took my Friend *Prig* with me upon a Ride, and disclosed to him my Situation, and the eager Desire I had to follow Mr. *Diaper's* Example by going Abroad ; for which I gave him such Reasons, that, finding all his Persuasions to the contrary of no Avail, he heartily promised me his Assistance to bring over my Father and Mother to lay aside their Thoughts of seeing me fixed in *England* ; and now we began to think of the best Means to bring it to bear, when luckily I recollected that Mr. *Goodwill* had an Uncle in the Direction of the *East-India* Company and determined to write to that Gentleman to use his Interest with him, for my obtaining somewhat in their Service, which I had all the Reason in the World to believe he would employ with a great deal of Pleasure ; and, accordingly, that very Evening I wrote to him, acquainting him with my Request and my Inducements for it ; and another Letter to his Lady to back me in my Desire ; and sent them directly to the Post. Mean Time, I endeavoured to keep my Father from making any Progress in my Affairs, by proposing continual Parties of Pleasure to him and Mr. *Diaper*, which they readily engaged in, upon the Consideration of the Confinement I had suffered, which they imagined must have considerably hurt my Constitution, and rendered Air and the Amusements of the Country necessary to re-establish my Health ; and my Mother, as well as my Father, was very careful never to mention Sir *Walter* or his Family,

ly, which I was glad of, for the least Word of my dear *Louisa* would have cast me into my old Melancholy, which I was now somewhat relieved from by the Pursuit of my favourite Project. At length a Letter arrived from *Yorkshire*, which, to my Surprise, only contained these Words :

DEAR SIR,
MR. *Goodwill* will be in Town, almost as soon as you receive this ; and I believe I shall also have the Happiness to see you myself.

Your most affectionate Friend,

K. GOODWILL.

I could hardly tell what to think of Mr. *Goodwill's* not writing himself, and the *Laconic Strain* of this Epistle from his Wife, and waited Impatiently another Week for the Event ; for I had wrote to Mr. *Goodwill*, to be so good to send a Letter to my Father, and to endeavour therein to bring him to consent, by representing the Service he could do me, if it were in his Power. The Week was hardly expired, when as we were one Morning at Breakfast, a Coach and Six drove up to the House, which Mr. *Diaper* was wondering at, when my Mother clapping her Hands for Joy, cried out, I am sure, *Joe*, that Livery belongs to a very great Friend of yours ; and so it did indeed, and springing from my Seat I ran to the Door before any of the Servants, and opening it, flew to the Coach side, where Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady were just alighted, who clasped me in his Arms, with Affection, telling me, You see Mr. *Thompson*, I don't do Things by Halves ;

Halves ; but am come to Town myself on Purpose to serve you. I returned him my Thanks, as well as my confused Joy would permit, and ran to salute his Lady, who was in Raptures to see me, and said an hundred obliging Things. My Father and Mr. *Diaper*, with the two Ladies, soon approached, and the Interchange of Compliments was very polite and endearing, and my Father, who had before he came to Town been several Times at Mr *Goodwill's*, introduced them to Mr. *Diaper* and his Spouse, who expressed their Satisfaction at the Honour that was done them, in Terms that shewed how much they thought themselves obliged. When the first Hurry of our Spirits was over, my Father asked, To what happy Turn it was that we owed the Pleasure of seeing them ? Upon which Mrs. *Goodwill* told him, laughing, that he should soon know that, and, perhaps when he came to be informed, he would wish they had never come at all ; but he replied, that since she could behave so merrily upon the Occasion, he was sure it was nothing that could make him uneasy, for he, next to the Son, they had preserved him, respected her and Mr *Goodwill* second to no person on Earth. The Conversation then became general and the Day was spent most agreeably, the Evening concluding with Mirth, in which *Prig*, who soon after arrived, was a Sharer ; and the Health of my Friend was not forgot to be toasted over and over, to whom this amiable Pair expressed so much Value, that Mr. *Diaper* and his Mother were full of Acknowledgment for it.

The next Morning after Breakfast, for Mr. *Diaper*, who had Room enough, insisted upon, had obtained their Company, for two or three Days, with their whole Equipage ; taking an Hint from Mr *Goodwill*. I went out, and left them

them all together, when I was sensible he would bring the Matter of my Desire upon the Anvil ; nor was I mistaken, for I was sent for in, about two Hours, by my Friend *Prig*, who told me he believed all Things were made easy for me, and that I should hear something that would surprize me. I followed him into the Parlour, where I had left them, and perceived my Mother was drying her Eyes, which gave me some Pain. So *Joey*, says my Father, I find you have put a Trick upon us ; and yet such an one, that, as it has afforded us the Comany of such valuable Friends, I can't be angry at. So you are willing to leave us in Pursuit of Adventures, I find ; but Mr. *Goodwill* had said so much in Favour of your Scheme, and has been so well backed by Mr. *Prig*, that, notwithstanding all my Reluctance, I believe I must yield to part with you, if you can bring your Mother to a Compliance, who seems more averse to losing you than any one. Mean Time, pray return that good Friend of your's, pointing to Mr. *Goodwill*, Thanks ; for he has been offering such Things in your Favour, that convince me he loves you as much if you were his own Son. I advanced to him, and thanked him, with an Action betokening all the Gratitude of my Mind ; and then endeavoured, by all the Persuasions I was Master of, to bring my dear Mother to accord to my going Abroad ; which, with great Reluctance, at length I did ; and then they all lamented my not going at the same Time with my Friend, as Mr. *Goodwill* was certain he could have got the same Voyage for me, by his Interest ; but no Body seemed more sorry on that Account, than Mr. *Diaper* and his Lady, who hoped, however, we should encounter each other in some Part or other of the Voyage, which it was far from impossible we should do. We then, agreeable to
a Desire

a Desire of Mr. *Goodwill*, all consented to accompany him to his House in Town, where he insisted we should spend the Time till my Embarkation, which would be soon, as the Company were now taking up Ships to send out to their several Factories; and he did not doubt of procuring me a very good Birth in one of them. My Father told him, he left it intirely to his Management; and was sure he could give his Son into no better Hands.

At our Arrival in Town, we were received and entertained with great Magnificence; and the Day after it, Mr. *Goodwill* took me with him to wait upon his Uncle, who, the first Minute he mentioned his Request, assured him I should be provided for immediately; and mentioned one Captain *Social*, of the *Hastings*, bound to *Fort St. George*, as a Man of a good Disposition; and that he hoped to procure a *Factory* for me at that Place, which he thought would be more advantageous than the Business of a *Supercargoe*; and would advise me, when I was appointed to go with him. We left him, quite pleased with our Visit, Mr. *Goodwill* not doubting he would be as good as his Word; and now, Mr. *Thompson*, says he, I'll persuade Mrs. *Goodwill* to send a Venture of a Couple of thousand Pounds by you, which you shall make the most of. I embraced him at this fresh Mark of his Kindness, and returned Home as brisk and lively as ever I was in my Life, fired with the Expectations of my new Destination, and the Pleasures I should experience in viewing foreign Countries, improving my Fortune, and making my Friends happy. Two or three Days after, I received an Order to attend the Board of *Directors*, which accordingly I did the next Day, and think I never was
more

more struck with any Thing, than the Sight of a Number of Gentlemen, through whose Hands the Concerns of so important and extensive a Traffic passed, and who managed the Affairs of such a Track of Country as they possessed in *Asia*, superior to the Dominions of some *European* Princes in Magnitude. I was received in such a Manner, as convinced me how powerful my Recommendations had been ; and, after enquiring into my Abilities, and the Profession I had followed, I was informed I was appointed a Factor at *Fort St. George*, and that I must prepare to embark in a Fortnight's Time, on board the *Hastings*, Captain *Social*, bound to that Place. They then gave me some Lessons of Fidelity and Honour in managing the Concerns that would be committed to my Care ; and, after having seen the proper Securities taken, very politely wished me a good Voyage, with Health and Prosperity in the Country. We then, that is, myself and Mr. *Goodwill*, and my Father, went with Mr. *Goodwill's* Uncle Home, where we returned him our Thanks, in a proper Manner, and staid to dine with him, when he gave me all the Intelligence he could of the Nature of my Post, and the Country, where he had been himself some Years ; which afterwards was of very great Use and Service to me.

Thus all Things settled, my Father applied himself to fit me out in an handsome Manner, in which he spared no Cost ; and the joint Endeavours of Mr. and Mrs. *Diaper*, my Mother and Mrs. *Goodwill*, furnished me with every Thing in such Profusion, that I believe never any Body was better provided ; and, amongst other Things, my Father took Care to buy me a choice Collection of Books.

C H A P.

C H A P. XLII.

Mr. Thompson gives his Son a Paper of Instructions, for the Management of his Conduct.——
Mr. Diaper resolves, with his Spouse, to spend some Time in Yorkshire.—Prig employed advantageously by Mr. Goodwill.——They accompany Thompson to Dover.——Their tender Parting.——He embarks on Board the Hastings, Captain Social, Commander.——They weigh Anchor, and set Sail on their Voyage to the East-Indies.

THE nearer the Time of my Departure approached, the more sensibly my Father and Mother were affected at the Thoughts of losing me; and, indeed, I myself felt all that Anxiety that is so natural, at a View of the Distance that would soon divide me from all I held dear. Mrs. *Goodwill* and Mrs. *Diaper* caught the infectious Concern from my Mother; and the former began to be sorry she had used any Means to forward my Going. I spent as much Time as I could with these worthy Women, and endeavoured, in Concert with the other Gentlemen, to dissipate, as much as possible, the Uneasiness that possessed my Mother's Mind, and to cure her of those apprehensive Thoughts she entertained of the Disasters that might happen to me.

My Father one Morning took me aside; and, taking me into his Arms, whilst he indulged a few Tears, which rolled down his Cheeks, said, My dear Son, you are going to be divided from me,——perhaps for ever. I have yielded to your Importunity; and, now I have done so, I am uneasy for the Event: However, that *Being*, who orders every Thing for the best, will, I hope, guide and protect you, prosper your Ways, and

return you safe to your disconsolate Parents, whose only Comfort you are, and to the Arms of your valuable Friends. I have drawn up here a Sett of Instructions for you, my Dear, which I recommend to your frequent Perusal, that so, when you are far from me, your Father's Care may still follow you. If you act agreeably thereto, which I don't at all doubt, you will be happy. He ceased here, and gave me the dear Paper, over which I shed many Tears; and shall never forget the affectionate and truly excellent Contents, which were as follow:

My dearest Son,

HARD as it is to think of Parting with you, I yield to your Desires, and commit you to the Care of that overseeing Providence, that directs and governs all the Actions of our Lives; but as you have disappointed all those sanguine Hopes and Expectations, I had fondly raised to myself, of immediately seeing you settled in your native Country, and receiving that Comfort and Pleasure, the Knowledge of your being near me would have inspired; and you are going to launch into an uncertain Ocean of Difficulties, and to encounter the unavoidable Dangers of a long and tedious Voyage, and a Sojourn in a distant, sultry Climate, obnoxious to the Health of the Inhabitants of these Northern Countries; you are bound, by the most sacred Ties, to act agreeably to the Dictates of Wisdom and Virtue, and, as much as lies in your own Power, to preserve yourself safe, that you may return once more to bless me, before I die. You will, therefore, excuse to the Affection and the Tenderness of a Parent, that I give you some Lessons for the Government of yourself, in your hazardous Undertaking; tho' I am sensible your good Sense, and
your

your excellent Endowments of Mind, render it in some Measure unnecessary.

In the first Place, oh! my Son, preserve, in all your Words and Actions, a thorough Veneration and Regard for the Divine Being, let nothing buy your Attention from that Object of your Thoughts, have an *Intention* to please him in all you do, be constant in such Acts of grateful Devotion to him, as raise the Soul from its earthly Fetters, and will secure an Ease and Calm of Mind in the greatest Distresses and Troubles you can meet with.

I need not inculcate to you, I hope, to persevere in the steady Practice of the Precepts of your immortal *Saviour*, and, by adhering to those Maxims of Virtue and Religion you have imbibed, secure yourself, at all Events, a Place, where Sorrow never shall come, nor Sin and Death shall ever abide. This Practice will always keep your Breast tranquil and easy, amidst the most torturing Hardships; and were the whole World, as *Horace* says, to feel a general Dissolution, you would hear the mighty Shock with Unconcern, and unappalled.

To your Superiors shew a generous and disinterested Respect; to your Equals, an honest, open Freedom; and to your Inferiors, a good natured Humanity, and a proper Sensibility of what they do to serve you.

In the Company's Concerns, behave with a Fidelity, that your own Heart shall never reproach you with; and in such legal Opportunities as occur, of profiting yourself, shew no Greediness, no rapacious Avarice; and those Riches you thus may chance to acquire, will be as Balm to your Mind, and you will never survey them with that peevish Anxiety, ill-bought Wealth does always occasion.

Never affect superior Knowledge to those you are concerned with ; and, in dealing with the Natives of the Country you are proceeding to, let them that see that you are a real *Christian*, and that sets you above them, in Sincerity, Honour, and Honesty, as much as it does in your future Expectations of Hereafter ; then, perhaps, tho' you are not required to step out of your Road, to attempt it, you may make them inamoured of those Doctrines you profess, and become Partakers of the Cross of *Christ*.

Be not hasty nor passionate, the common Fault of those who reside long in hot Countries ; Passion deforms the Visage, hurts the Bosom, and renders a Man uneasy in himself, and odious to those about him.

Drink with Moderation ; for your Health's Sake. I charge you to avoid all Intemperance of that Kind, which destroys such Multitudes in the *Indies*. Look upon yourself as accountable for your Life, and the Use of it, to the Author of your Being ; and that your Father and Mother's Happiness or Misery here depend upon its Valuableness and Preservation.

Adieu, my beloved Son ; may Success crown all your lawful and honourable Undertakings ; and may you be returned safe and happy, at length, to the Embraces of,

Your most affectionate and tender Father,

WILLIAM THOMPSON.

I received a great deal of Satisfaction, before my Departure, upon understanding that Mr. *Diaper* had yielded to the Desires of my Father, Mother, and Mr. and Mrs. *Goodwill*, to go with his Family to spend some Months in *Yorkshire*, partly
at

at one House, and partly at the other ; and that they were also to set out to go there as soon as they had seen me safely embarked : Thus I had the Pleasure to contemplate, that all these dear and valuable Persons would be together, to console and comfort each other, under the Concern my Absence, and that of my Friend, would naturally occasion, to two such Fathers, of whom we were the only Children, and the Solace of their Age ; and Mr. *Goodwill* was so taken with *Prig*, that he promised him the Management of all his Concerns, and gave him a Deputation to act as his Steward, in three or four Manors he possessed in the County of *Hertford* ; insisting also, he should take a Journey into *Yorkshire*, at the same Time, which he readily complied with, as it was now Vacation ; and that particularly gave me great Delight, as by him I sent Letters to Mr. and Mrs. *Belair*, and Miss *Suskey*, with an Account of all that had happened ; and recommended him to them, as a proper Hand to convey their Letters to, for me and Mr. *Diaper*, and to transmit our Answers to them, when they arrived in *London*.

When Capt. *Social* informed me he was to fall down to *Gravesend*, I would have gone on Board ; but he very genteelly told me that he believed he should come too in the *Downs* ; or, if not, that, if I'd immediately set out for *Dover*, he'd shorten Sail till a Boat could bring me on Board from that Place, or *Deal*. I took him at his Word ; and, all my Friends resolving to accompany me, we arrived, without any remarkable Accident, at the first-mentioned Place, and found the *Hastings* had not yet come round ; but she did that very Night, and the Wind dying away, the Captain came to Anchor in the *Downs*, and came on Shore with

several Gentlemen, bound on the Voyage with us, to pay their Compliments to my Friends, and receive their Fellow-passenger ; so that our Inn was filled with Guests ; and Mr. *Goodwill* would pursue his Generosity so far, as to entertain us all. We strove to keep up our Spirits, as well as we could ; but still were all very heavy-hearted ; tho' my Father put on all the Gaiety that he could possibly, to divert the rest : At last the dreadful Word was given, that we must repair on Board ; and whilst the Captain and the rest went down to the Boat, I prepared with an heavy Heart, to take a long Adieu of my Friends. Mr. *Goodwill* himself was struck a little at the mournful Scene, notwithstanding all his Philosophy ; and the big Drops stood in *Prig's* Eyes, who could not utter a Syllable. Mr. *Diaper* behaved with as little Composure as when he parted with his own Son ; his Wife and Mrs. *Goodwill* dissolved into Tears ; my Father clasped me in his Arms, with the utmost Fervor, and bestowed ten thousand Blessings upon me, and put up his Prayers for my Safety. I embraced my dear Mother, whose Grief would hardly permit her to return the Caresses I gave her ; and, as for myself, I was a kind of weeping, inanimate Chorus to every Thing that was said or done. We parted ; and the Separation of the Soul from the Body, methought, could not be more dreadful ! Mr. *Goodwill* and Mr. *Diaper* could only see me to the Boat, where, after embracing each other, without saying a Word I cast myself into it, and a Flood of Tears relieved my anxious Bosom. I really thought I could have stood this Adieu with more Firmness ; but I even sobbed, and my Breast heaved painfully, with the struggling Sorrow ; so that I was incapable of turning my Eyes towards the Shore again, dreading,
yet

yet longing still, to behold once more, the dear People I had forsaken.

When we came on Board, the Captain ordered a Bowl of Punch, to wash down Sorrow ; telling me, at the same Time, that he had not been more moved himself a great while, than at the Condition he saw me in, and my Friends ; adding, that he did not doubt but our Meeting again would be as affecting. I dried my Tears, at the Mirth my Companions assumed ; began to reason with myself, and became calm and sociable, not without putting up some silent Petitions to Heaven, for the Health and Safety of those I had left, and my own happy Voyage. Whilst we were weighing Anchor, a Boat came on Board, with some live Stock, and some Dozens of Wine, which my Father had sent as an additional Present for our Stores, and several other Favours of the like Kind from Mr. *Diaper*, with their kind Love to me, and their Respects to the rest of the Mess; and a Servant of Mr. *Goodwill's*, who came in it, gave me a Letter, which by the Superscription, I knew to be my dearest Mother's Hand ; and, tho' I had been absent but an Hour, I was ready to kiss the Fellow, as a Person whom I had not seen for an Age, and who brought Tidings from the Dead. I perceived there was somewhat inclosed ; and, the Man telling me I was desired not to open it till I got out to Sea, I put it up securely in my Pocket, and wrote a few Lines to the dear Woman, and the rest of my Friends, in such Terms, as my present tender Situation dictated.

An Easterly Gale soon after springing up, we finished getting up our Anchor, with the Shouts of the Crew, to whom we had given an handsome Quantity of Liquor ; and Capt. *Social* saluted the Town with ten Guns, and added as many more,

in Compliment to our Friends, who, coming on the Shore, pursued us with eager Eyes, as far as Sight could follow us :

*I shook my Hand at Distance on the Main ;
They took the Sign, and shook their Hands again.*

I was charmed in sailing along the chalky Coasts, to observe the Country all bespread with Towns, which had fine romantic Effect upon the Sight, and could not fail of being highly entertaining to Persons who had never been at Sea before ; and what gave me great Joy was, that, after a little Qualmishness, I felt no more Sickness then, or all the Voyage after. With a Sigh I took Leave of *England*, as we passed that famous Promontory, the *Land's-End*, which we did the next Morning betimes, extremely glad to have cleared the Channel ; and,

*Now dreaded Scilly mocks the straining Sight,
Whose useful Fires, expiring, faintly gleam ;*

And we are lost, in the vast *Atlantic Ocean*, to any other Objects than Sky and Water.

C H A P. XLIII.

He open his Mother's Letter, and finds a Picture of his Louisa.——They meet with a terrible Storm.——Discover a Vessel on Fire, which blows up.——They receive the Crew of her on Board.——Thompson discovers an old Friend among them.——Their Account of the Misfortune.

MY new Way of Life agreed with me exceedingly well, and I felt myself so brisk and lively, that I thought I was perfectly inspired by every Breeze that breathed thro' our Sails. Beside the Officers of the Ship, we had several other Gentlemen on Board, some, like myself, going in the Company's Service, others to settle for the Sake of improving their Fortunes, at their Factories in the *East-Indies*, by Trafficking on their own Bottoms ; and we were in general a very sociable and friendly Set of People, who having seen the World, and being intelligent and improved in their Minds, formed an entertaining and agreeable Society. We had laid in such a Stock of Provisions and Liquors of all Kinds, that we had little to fear of wanting any of the Conveniencies of Life, in so long a Voyage, if we were favoured with a tolerable Passage. The Captain relinquished much of the usual Ceremony practised by Gentlemen of his Rank, and we formed a Mess together, that made every Thing satisfactory about us, and in all our Actions we shewed an Inclination to please each other. My Cabin was large and commodious, and sufficient for me and a faithful Domestic, *Will Truman*, who had long lived with

my Father, and out of pure Affection resolved to follow the Fortunes of his Son.

We had no sooner got out to Sea, than I opened my Mother's Letter, and, oh ! what was my Joy, what my Sorrow, to behold, in a Gold-case, set with small Brilliants, the Picture, in Miniature, of my dear, my lovely *Louisa* ? Wonder seized me at viewing the unexpected Image of that eternally adored Fair one, and all my Regret for her Loss revived afresh and kindled up Remembrances in my Soul, which Time and my present Views had somewhat stifled. I kissed the sweet Resemblance, over and over, and hung it by a Ribbon to my Bosom, resolving to keep it there till the Hour of my Death. In the Hurry of my Spirits, I forgot for some Time to look at the Letter that conveyed this inestimable Present ; but, when I became calmer, I found it to the following Effect :

My dearest much loved SON,

THOU' I blame myself for renewing your Trouble, at the Sight of this Jewel, yet I cannot keep it longer from you, as it is your undoubted Property. Some time before our dear *Louisa's* Aunt set out for *France*, after her Niece's Death, a Footman came from her with a Letter, and this precious Relick. If the Sight of it surprized me greatly, the Contents of the Letter gave me still more Astonishment : She said, her Niece, on her Death-bed, had desired it might be sent to me, as Token of the Respect and Love she bore to the Mother of a Gentleman, who was infinitely dear to her, and for whom it was originally intended, if Fate had not deprived her of him in so cruel a Manner. By *Fidele*, I afterwards understood the Meaning of these Expressions, which were then quite

quite dark to me, and that the News of your Death had given her the fatal Stroke, that lost her to us for ever. But, my Son, you live, thank God, and may you live long and happy! Whenever you look at that sweet Face, consider my Loss in our *Louisa*, and preserve yourself, to make me Amends for my Affection to both of you. Oh! my dear, my Heart is too full, at this Separation, to say more! Heavens guard, protect and keep you, make you happy where you are going, and return you safe, to bless the fondly longing Sight of,

Your most tenderly affectionate Mother,

ELIZABETH THOMPSON.

Propitious Gales carried us, without any remarkable Occurrence, to the Height of *Cape Cantin*, to the North-west of which, we were by our Reckonings distant about 120 Leagues, when we began to apprehend a gathering Storm. The Clouds on the Western Board, began to blacken the Skies, and a few melancholy Drops wept a Farewel to one of the finest Days I had ever met thought experienced: And now the Lightnings flashed, and the hoarse Thunder growled over the concave Vault with deafening Roar, as if whole Nature was meeting with a general Dissolution, and presently the impetuous *West Wind* raised the irritated Billows Mountains high. Our Commander had given his Orders, with such just Discernment, that we were prepared we thought to meet its worst Efforts; but the redoubled Fury of the Storm soon rendered our Situation very dangerous, and, before we could hand our *Main-sail*, it was split into twenty Pieces, and kept flapping
against

against the Mast for some Time, before a short Lull of the Wind would permit it to be run up to the Yard. If I had ever advantageous Notions of our *British* Sea-men, I now more than ever found them just, and their Diligence and Bravery, on such Occasions, surely dignifies them before those of any Country I ever knew. Not an Hand but was employed in executing some Order or other for the Safety of the Vessel; and to see them, like Swarms of Bees, hanging on the Yards, was a Sight equally pleasing and dreadful. The Tempest encreased with a greater Violence, and the Waves tossed us aloft, and then sunk us alow, with such sudden Shocks, that my Brains were perfectly addled; and, notwithstanding all the Force I used with myself, I could stand the Deck no longer, but followed the Example of the rest of the Passengers, and committed myself to the safe Custody of my Cabbin. The horrid Tumult upon Deck, the Piping of the Boatswain and his Mates, mingling with the Howling of the Winds, and the continual Dashing of the foaming Waves made such a Confusion, as was sufficient to stun the Head of any Stranger to these uncouth and terrifying Scenes. For near Four and Twenty Hours we lay too? but tho' to us all this gave excessive Pain, when it was in the Height, Captain *Social* told me, it was nothing at all but good Seamen's Weather, and swore he was tired of the little Action he had had so long before. About Noon, the next Day, the Skies began to clear, the Wind seemed to die away in gentle Sobbing, and soon the Heavens were serene; the Sun darted his brightning Rays upon us, and we felt no Incommodity but the Ship's rolling Motion, occasioned by the great tumbling Sea the Storm,

Storm had left behind it, and which put the Seamen into more Apprehension than the foregoing Blasts had occasioned ; but in the Evening a stark Calm succeeded, and the Surface of the Water was as smooth as a *Mill-pond*. The descending Sun formed a Kind of dusky Amphitheatre around our Horizon ; the azure Firmament was illuminated with all the glorious shining Host that adorn those spacious Plains, till the Moon,

*Rising in clouded Majesty, at length,
Apparent Queen, unveil'd her peerless Light,
And o'er the Deep her silver Mantle threw !*

A Scene, this, that raised my Mind into such a State of wondering Devotion, as I could not, if I may say so, even in Thought, express ; at last I broke out into a Soliloquy somewhat like this : Oh, infinite Creator ! benign Governor of the Universe ! *How manifold are thy Works ! In Wonder hast thou made them all ! Day by Day we magnify thee, the Father of a boundless Majesty.* Permit an humble Mortal to prostrate before thee, and worship thy immense Omnipotence ! Can we be ungrateful, when thou hast given us Faculties above all the rest of thy Creatures here below, to contemplate thy Works, to reverence thy forming Wisdom ? How low, how unworthy I seem, how little to myself, when I reflect, that all yon splendid Sparks, that glittering, cheer me with their Influence, may be Worlds, more worthy thy Care and Protection, than the yet not well known Spot, of which I am an Inhabitant ! But, oh ! forgive the Attempts we make to search into thy hidden Treasures, the Stores of thy eternal Creation, the *Arcana* thou hast every-where around strewed ; for, by
our

our Re-searches, we are still more and more convinced, that *thy Ways are past finding out*, and our Adoration is raised in Proportion to the Discoveries we fancy we make ! Lowly bending before thee,

*Supremest Good ! whose providential Sway
Remoteſt Seas, far proſtrate Nations tell ;
Whether ador'd inviſible, all pure,
Diffuſe as Light thro' out eternal Space ;
Or circumſcribed, a local Deity,
As narrow Ignorance has oft maintain ;
Accept our grateful Praise, which, taught to
riſe
From our glad Hearts, invades thy op'ning
Ears,
For every Inſtance of thy gracious Aid,
For every Wonder in our Favour wrought,
Whiſt roving thus thro' Ocean's utmoſt Bounds !*

In the Morning we were bleſſed with a fine eaſy Gale, that carried us, at the Rate of two Knots an Hour, ſo ſmoothly, that we could hardly perceive the Way the Veſſel made :

————— a Breeze
*Soft, breathing lightly with its Wings, along
The ſlacken'd Cordage glides ; the Sailor's Ear
Perceives no Sound thro' out the vaſt Expanſe ;
None but the Murmurs of the ſliding Prow,
Which gently parts the ſmooth and azure Main.*

GLOVER.

In Latitude 20°, 10', about a Week afterwards, whiſt we were endeavouring to ſtand away to the *Cape de Verde* Iſlands, we heard ſeveral Guns fired as from a Ship in Diſtreſs ; which Signals our Captain answered, and ſtood far to the Weſtward, more than his Courſe required, as we imagined

gined the Sound came from that Point of the Compass: they continued firing for several Glasses, and then we discovered a great Light at some Leagues Distance, as if a Ship on Fire, which made a most terrible Appearance; and, soon after we had detcried her, she blew up, the Fire extinguished, and a black thick Cloud seemed to rise from the Water. We made no Doubt, that the Crew had had Time enough to save themselves in their Boats; so the Captain shortened Sail, and fired a Gun every half Hour to acquaint the unhappy Sufferers that Assistance was at Hand. About twelve next Day, having happily very favourable Weather all the Time, we saw, as far as our Glasses would enable us to see, a Boat crouded with Men, who seemed struggling with all their might to gain our Vessel; upon which Captain *Social* took in more Sail, and, about Seven o'Clock, the poor Creatures, almost spent and dead with Fatigue, got within a Boat's Length of the Ship's Side, whence they haled us, and begged for God's Sake to be taken on Board. This was immediately granted, and, backing the Sails, they all got safely in, to the Number of Forty-six Souls. I never received more Pleasure than in seeing how eager the generous Seaman is in relieving his Fellow in Distress; every Man strove who should be foremost, in giving them or procuring them Refreshment; and, on our Part, the Captain, as we understood him to be, and two others, whom he pointed out we got into the great Cabbin, where we set before them the best Provisions and Liquor we had, and had the Satisfaction to see them eat like famished Men, for they had not had Time to get any Thing out of their Ship but a little Biscuit, so that most of them had been fasting, ever since they left her. We found their Ship
was

was bound from *Virginia* to *London*, partly laden with Tobacco, partly with Rum, having touched at *Barbadoes* to take in the latter, both on the Account of a Gentleman who was a Passenger on Board, to whom the Captain behaved with great Deference, which made us all take more particular Notice of him ; but I had scarce cast my Eyes upon his Face, whilst at the same Time his encountered mine, than he ran eagerly to me, and we embraced each other with the utmost Affection, all we could utter being dear *Thompson ! Dear Prim !* For it was that very young Fellow, whom, I must confess, I should have as soon have expected to meet in *London*, at that Minute, as on Board the *Hastings*. Every body seemd pleased as ourselves, at a Meeting so unexpected as they judged this to be, and my Messmates, as well as myself, strove to outdo each other in Complaisance and Tenderneſs to these new Comers. If I was surprized to see *Prim*, he was as much to see me at Sea ; but we were obliged to suspend our Curiosity to attend to other Matters. Captain *Clements*, for that was the Name of the Captain of the Ship that was burnt, returned, together with the rest, the most unfeigned Thanks for the Relief we had afforded them, and begged Captain *Social* would permit him and his Crew to remain with him, till such Time as he met a Vessel bound to *Europe* ; promising to draw Bills on his Owners to indemnify him ; but *Prim*, which made me stare at him, assured our Captain, that he would satisfy him for every Thing before he left our Ship, and accept Captain *Clements*'s Bills himself. We were soon induced to comply, and when every Thing was regulated for the Men, and Births assigned them, Captain *Social* provided Mr. *Clements* with

with a Cabbin ; and I desired the Favour of *Prim*, to accept of Half mine whilst he staid on Board, which he readily acquiesced in, and another Gentleman practised the same Hospitality to their Comrade.

Captain *Clements's* Account of the late unfortunate Accident that had happened to his Ship, which was called the *Lovely Betty*, of fourteen Guns, and 300 Tons Burden, was thus : A Fire being left later than ordinary by the Cook in the Capooch, one of the Seamen had lighted his Pipe at it, and then went down to his Birth to smoke it with some of his Mess-mates over a Can of Flip : It happened their Liquor was very low, and, to get a fresh Supply, they very honestly agreed that this same Fellow should attempt to spile one of the Hogsheads of Rum, which, for Want of Room in the Hold, was stowed pretty near them : He forgot his Pipe, and whilst he was at this precious Work, a Quantity of the lighted Tobacco fell into his Chest, which stood open, and some combustible Matters he had in it, being the Gunner's Mate, took Fire, which was not perceived till the Flames had got to too great an Head for all the Pains and Skill they made Use of to put a Stop to them. They knew they were not far from the *Cape de Verde* Islands, which gave them some Spirits to attempt getting there in their Boat ; but, however, not willing to miss any Opportunity that might offer to save their Lives, before they left their Ship, they had fired those Signals of Distress, which brought them the Blessing of the Relief we gave them. The Captain concluded his Narration, by acquainting us, that Mr. *Prim* was the chief Sufferer, most of the Cargo being shipped by him, which, however, he was sensible he had wrote Word to insure in *London*, by a Vessel

fel that failed before from *Barbadoes* ; and, as to the Bottom, that he had insured himself.

I was surprized still more and more, to hear *Prim* talked of thus, as a Man of great Worth, tho' I was heartily glad to hear it ; and when we retired to Rest, which was not till pretty late, after the mutual Caresses were over, and I had gratified his Curiosity to know how I came in the *Hastings*, I said, My Friend, you left *England* very abruptly, which I have often thought of since with the utmost Concern ; and, by the Situation you are in at present, I am sensible you must have met with several Turns of Fortune, that I wish you would gratify me in the Recital of. I have so, indeed, my dear *Thompson*, he replied, and, tho' at present in such Circumstances, am really a happy Man : I always loved you, my Friend, have thought of you tenderly an hundred Times since my Departure, and, as soon as I had seen *London*, you'd have been the first Person I should have renewed my Acquaintance with. Come, make a Bowl of Punch, and, whilst we are drinking it, I will gratify you with a Relation of the good and bad Accidents that have occurred to me since my unhappy Breach with my Master, and the Means by which, I may say, I am at present rich and happy. I made the Punch, and Mr. *Prim* began his Adventures thus.

C H H P. XLIV.

The Adventures of Mr. WILLIAM PRIM.

YOU remember what an Agony I was in that fatal Morning I took my Leave of you, after my Master had discovered my being deficient in the Cash he had entrusted to my Care. He was so incensed, that he would suffer me no longer to continue with him; and my Father, who was as much irritated against me, hurried me on Board an *East-India* Ship, which sailed the next Day, the Captain of which he had some slight Acquaintance with, and who took me in Quality of his Clerk. All this was done so suddenly, that I was but poorly fitted out for such a Voyage, and my Father has since lamented the Precipitancy with which he parted with me, by Letter, which has cost him a great Deal of Affliction and numberless Tears; but, being a Man of a warm and passionate Disposition, I can very easily forgive him, especially as it was an Introduction to the good Fortune I have since met with.

Captain *Surly*, my Commander, who, from his Infancy had used the Seas, was a meer Brute, and wanted common Humanity, and my Father, having indiscreetly confided to him the Secret of my being forced to Sea, upon the aforesaid Account, instead of striving to make my Captivity easy, and if I had any bad Principles, to reclaim me from them, he was continually observing, in a reproaching malicious Strain, the Slip that I made, and menacing me with bad Usage, if I served him as I had done my former Master.

You may guess that this sat very hardly upon a Breast, that had some Principles of Honour, and knew how Mankind ought to be treated; but you must

must confess, my Friend, this is too often the Case, and many an unhappy Man, that has been guilty of an Error, would reform, if the World would let him ; but being exposed and maltreated, they grow desperate and regardless of what may happen to them, and finding all Mankind their Enemies, resolve to be even with them, and commence downright Villains, from the Impossibility of regaining their Characters. However, this was not my Case, and I knew the humane and thinking Part of Mankind would pass over a single Crime in a young Extravagant, could they see Tokens of Amendment that would justify their good Opinion of him.

A Dog could not endure a worse Life than I did, most Part of this dreadful Voyage ; and when I expostulated with him, he gave me the most opprobrious Language, and, several Times, even went so far as to kick me out of the Cabbin, where he was generally drunk the greatest Part of the Day. Such Tyranny made me weary of my Life, and I began not to care what became of me ; and more especially as the Ship's Crew took the Signal from their Captain, and treated me in general with the utmost Contempt ; and one Day a Nephew of *Surly's*, who was a fourth Mate on Board, without the least Provocation, took me by the Nose, and led me about twenty Paces, to the great Diversion of the Ship's Company. Flesh and Blood could hold out no longer, and, seizing him round the Waist, in Spite of all his Struggling, as he was not near so strong as myself, I fairly flung him over Board, where he would certainly have paid for his Insolence with his Life, if all the Sails had not been laid aback, and the Boat hoisted out to save him. The Minute the Captain heard of this Action, he ordered me before him, and with the Fury of a Tiger fell upon me with his Cane, and
having

having nothing to defend myself, and he being a very strong Man, beat me most unmercifully, and then ordered me to be turned before the Mast. I must say this for every one of the Officers and Men, that they thought my Usage on this Occasion very hard, and without the least Colour of Justice; and a *Supercargo* we had on Board, was so exasperated, that he told the Captain to his Face that he was a Scoundrel, for which the Brute ordered him to keep to his Cabin, and would not suffer him for some Days to take the Benefit of walking upon the Quarter-deck. And now the young *Surly* used me worse than ever any Galley-slave was used, and made me almost curse the Hour I was born; and if we had not put into *Madagascar*, where we were driven by Strefs of Weather, I should have executed a Resolution I had formed, which was, the first Opportunity, to seize him, and fling myself over Board with him, and drown him and myself together; but the Sight of Land put other Thoughts into my Head, which I pursued the Dictates of in the following Manner: We lay in a good Bay on the West Side of the Island, where we were repairing our Rigging, which I think is called *the Bay of St. Augustine*, and were employed in taking in such Wood and Water as we stood in Need of for the Prosecution of our Voyage; and as I was employed in the Boat, in making frequent Trips from the Shore to the Ship to fetch on Board the Wood we cut, I resolved, the first Opportunity I had to make my Escape, and rather trust to the Mercy of the barbarous Natives, of whom I heard strange Accounts, or to the Chance of some other Ship's putting in, by which I might get off the Island, than longer to continue in the hellish Slavery I was under amongst this villainous Sett of Wretches. About two
Leagues

Leagues from our Landing-place was a very thick Wood, by which my Escape might be concealed till the Ship was obliged to pursue their Voyage. Being thus determined, I waited an Opportunity till the last Water was to come on Board, and mean Time secretly conveyed on the Shore, at Times, a Tinder-box, some Biscuit, and a Bottle or two of Brandy, all which I had, unperceived by my Comrades, concealed in the Sand; and taking a lucky Time, when they were all engaged in Sleep, waiting a proper Minute, till the Tide set off Shore, I secured a Musquet, and an Horn of Powder which lay by them, and, with all Expedition possible, gained the Wood I have before spoken of, where I tarried at the Skirts of it till such Time as the Boat went on Board; which it did, after they had hallooed and hooped, for the Space of half an Hour, after me, to give me Notice of their going off. I had got upon a rising Hill, from behind which I could see the Vessel, without the Danger of being seen myself; and whether the Brute was glad to get rid of me, or what, I can't tell; but, without sending ashore again to search for me, they weighed Anchor, and I saw them stand out to Sea, with a brisk Wind at *N. W. by W.* which soon carried them out of my Sight.

I now began to feel all those Terrors a Man must experience, upon being thus left alone in an unknown Country, of which I had heard dreadful Stories, and without a Prospect of meeting with the Necessaries of Life, unless I threw myself into the Arms of barbarous Savages, who, perhaps, might treat me with more Cruelty than I had been used with before; and I began to bewail my Rashness and Folly, in leaving the Ship: but I soon awaked from this Tumult of my Soul, and went to the Beach to get my Biscuit and Brandy,
and

and what other Matters I had left there, which I found safe, and then sought the Cover of the Wood again; which I had no sooner entered, than I espied upon a Tree, the Wood of which is somewhat like Brazil Wood, a Fowl of a black Colour, spotted with white, somewhat resembling our Turkies, which I shot at, and killed; and, immediately cutting Sticks with my Knife, I made a Fire, dressed my Prize, and made as hearty a Meal as ever I did in my Life; and which was the more pleasant, because I had brought Salt on Shore in my Pocket, to relish what I killed. I was now in great Want of Water, and a Vessel to drink it in; the first Complaint I soon eased, by going to the Foot of the Rock where we had watered our Ship; and my Hat served me for drinking out of. In a few Days I began to find my Situation very agreeable, and resolved to keep as near the Bay as I could, to discover any Ship that should chance to put in there, by which I might get off the Island. I found in the Woods Dates, and on the Mountains Oranges and Citrons, which also yielded as fine, clear Water as ever I drank. Apes abound here in Abundance, and many Birds fit for Food; but especially that I have before spoken of, which has this remarkable Circumstance, that it has yellow Horns on its Head, which is a Mixture of blue and red; and they rove about the Woods in large Flocks, and are not shy, so that I got them without Difficulty; and in a Rock, pretty near the Extremity of this Wood, I found a natural Cave, which served me for my Lodging. My Brandy, by good Management, held out to a Miracle; and I soon learned to live without Bread, in Lieu of which I eat Dates. What I most apprehended, was the Want of Powder, of which I had now only a few Charges left; and,

to

to provide against the worst, having a very good Knife, I cut long Lances of the hard Wood I have mentioned, and practised myself in darting at a Mark; so that at length I became so dexterous, as to be able to transfix any Bird at a moderate Distance, that was not on the Wing. I had a Chart of the *East-Indies*, and several others, with a Treatise of Navigation, and a Pair of Compasses, with which I employed some Part of my Time; and, at other Times, I cut my Name on the Trees, and the Date of the Year on which I voluntarily became a Fugitive from the Human Race; and one of these I carved very handsomely, with the following Inscription:

Seaman,
This Inscription will tell thee,
That an unhappy Youth,
William Prim, an Englishman,
And Citizen of *London,*
Chose here to expose himself to all the Dangers
of an unknown Country,
Rather than longer pine under the Hardships in-
flicted upon him,
By *John Surly, Commander of the Dover India*
Man,

In the Year 17—.

Oh! if my Grief were known, my dire Despair,
Thou could'st not, sure, thy pitying Tears for-
bear;

Condemn'd, an hopeless Exile, thus to mourn,
My native Plains, where I shall ne'er return!

Ens entium miserere mibi!

All this Time, which was now near five Months, I had been discovered by none of the Inhabitants, and took Care, for Fear of them, to keep pretty much within the Purlieus of the Wood,

Wood, which I had so long made my Residence, often casting a wishing Eye towards the Sea, from my Look-out, eagerly hoping for the Arrival of some Vessel, to bear me from my melancholy Solitude. My Clothes were worn off my Back almost, and hung in grievous Tatters about me; and my Shoes had been gone a considerable Time; but my Feet were so hardened and callous, that I felt no Incommodity from going barefooted. One Day I discovered, from my Eminence, two of the Natives going towards the Bay; but providentially, tho' they passed thro' my Wood, they did not discover me. I can't express to you the Affright I was in; for, had they seen me, I must have expected to have been carried into the inland Parts of the Island, and have forsaken all Hopes of ever getting off, which now buoyed up my Spirits. They were well shaped, and had printed Pieces of Linen, seemingly Callicoe, thrown over their Shoulders, by which I perceived they now and then trucked with the *European* Vessels that came into the Island. They were armed with Bows and Arrows, and had each a long Wooden Lance in his Hand. I can't say I was entirely, however, without a Companion, for I had taken an Ape, in a Toil which I invented for that Purpose, made of the Boughs of Trees, over a deep Pit, which I had dug upon a Sand-hill; and though they are very large, I tamed him so, by my Kindness, that he followed me about like a Dog; and had so many odd Pranks and Grimaces, that he often made me laugh extremely, and would imitate all my Actions; so that I frequently sent him for Water, and to gather me Oranges and Lemons, which he did very dexterously. At length my Deliverance arrived; and to my inexpressible Joy, when I had, as near as I can guess, fulfilled my seventh Month, as I was wistfully surveying

veying the distant Ocean, and thinking over all the Accidents of my Life, I saw, some Leagues in the Offing, a Sail, and the Sight almost made me faint away; but how rejoiced! beyond Expression! was I, when it stood directly into the Bay, and casting Anchor there, sent its Boat on Shore to look for fresh Water. I presented myself before the Landing-place, and startled them, by my ragged, uncouth Figure, which at first made them stare; but our Joy was mutual when we discovered each other to be Countrymen; and, when I had told them some Part of my Story, they carried me on Board to their Captain, who seemed to be a sensible humane Man, but who questioned me very closely, fearing I had belonged to some of the Pyrate Ships, with which these Seas swarmed; and when he was convinced of the contrary, he entertained me on Board, gave me Clothes and Necessaries, and I once more began to live; but, having been so long disused to Breeches and Shoes, the former gauled me, and the latter swelled my Feet, most intolerably. The Captain's Name was *Nelson*, and that of his Ship, the *Charming Susanna*. I found he was very rich, and a considerable Planter in *Virginia*; and the Vessel was his own; that he had carried a Lading of his own Tobacco to *London*, from whence he took in a proper Cargo, to trade on the Coast of *Africa* for Slaves; that a Mutiny had happened amongst his Crew, who had risen upon him, and seized the Ship, which they endeavoured to bring round the *Cape* to this Island; but being in great Danger, in Lat. 40°, 10', S. and Long. 100. W of *London*, in a Storm they had released him, to navigate the Vessel, which he carried into the *Cape*; but tho' he had them now in his Power, he had been so honourable as not to betray them to the *Dutch*; and by mere Dint of
Argument

Argument and Persuasion, at which I found him an Artist myself, had reclaimed them, and all was past over, after setting the two chief Mutineers on Shore, and very justly paying them their Wages ; that another hard Gale had driven them so far to the *Eastward*, where their Want of Water had induced them to bear up to *Madagascar*, where they relieved me in so unexpected a Manner. There were 150 Negroes on Board, he having lost near 80 in these Seas by Sickness.

When Mr. *Nelson* had heard my Story, which he animadverted upon with great Sweetness, and found that I was not a Seaman, but bred up a Trader, he gave me Charge of his Books, and made me also his Steward, as well as his Clerk, having lost his former Steward in the Voyage ; and never was Man's Condition so altered for the better, for he was a mild, sociable, humane Creature, had little of the rough Seaman, but a vast deal of the Gentleman, about him ; and had, I soon found, studied and read the best Authors. In short, I loved him, and served him so readily and affectionately, that I perceived I gained much upon his Mind ; and you'd be surprized to think how dearly he valued me in so short a Time ; but now he never would eat or drink without me ; I became his constant Companion ; and, by the Civilities I was thereby enabled to confer on my Shipmates, gained the Esteem of the whole Ship's Crew. I found my Captain had in *Virginia* a Wife, and one Daughter, of whom he was often talking with great Tenderness ; and he promised me, if I'd settle with him there, he would give me a handsome Salary, to look after his Affairs ; which Proposal I readily closed with ; and indeed one main Inducement was, the Character he gave Miss *Fanny*, of whom I became perfectly

F 2

enamoured,

enamoured, and already conceived Hopes of possessing her, and making my Fortune.

We had a very good Voyage till we came to the *Cape de Verde* Islands, where we touched at *St. Vincent*, but had no sooner taken our Departure, than a great Storm arose, which puzzled all the Skill of our Seamen, and it was with Difficulty we rode it out after losing our Main-mast, which was shivered from Top to Bottom by a Flash of Lightning; and being unstepped by the same Flash, rolled over-board, endangering the Loss of the Ship, which, however, was preserved safe; and bearing away for the *Leeward-Islands*, under a Jury-mast, we there remained near a Month to refit, in which Time we disposed of an hundred of our Negroes, to great Advantage. My Health, during all these tedious Adventures and Voyages, was not in the least affected; and I grew rather stronger and stronger, by the continual Exercise I went thro'; and the Captain falling ill at *Bridgetown* in *Barbadoes*, he trusted the Management of all his Concerns to me, without Reserve; in which I behaved with such Diligence and Fidelity, that he embraced me, when he saw my Accounts; and, over and above my Wages, made me a genteel Present of twenty Guineas; and spoke of me in such Terms, to the Gentlemen of that Island, that, if my Gratitude to him would have suffered me, I might have settled there with great Advantage.

We arrived at *Gloucester* in *Virginia*, in about ten Days after we set sail from *Barbadoes*; but in our Passage we had very near all been destroyed, by a very terrible Accident that happened to us; and my Behaviour, on the Occasion, still more and more endeared me to Mr. *Nelson*. One of our People, being sent down in to the Powder-room for some Cartridges, in an Absence of
Thought,

Thought, carried an Inch of Candle with him, without putting it into a Lanthorn, which was an usual Precaution we made use of; and, having some Difficulty to come at what he wanted, very calmly stuck it into a Barrel of Powder, which was half unheaded; and forgetting it afterwards, came up without it, fastening the Hatch Way after him. I immediately recollected he had carried a Candle with him, and called him aft, where the Captain, a Mate, and myself were walking on the Quarter-deck, and asked him hastily, What he had done with the Candle? The Fellow stood aghast, and could not utter a Word; Mr. *Nelson*, and all the rest of us, turned as pale as Death, and he ordered the Boat out immediately, expecting every Minute the Ship to blow up; but I instantly assumed Presence of Mind enough in this Dread and Confusion, and opening the Hatch, jumped down the Ladder, where I found the steady Candle had burnt till within the Distance of two Lines, only, from the Powder: I immediately ran my Hand gently under it, and scooping that, and an Handful of Powder with it, out of the Barrel, endeavoured to toss it up into the Cabbin, but it fired in my Hand, and burnt me in a dreadul Manner: However, it saved the Ship and our Lives, and every Body had such a Sense of the Hazard I ran, and the Service I had done them, that the Captain clasped me in his Arms, and told me he would ever esteem me as his Son; and the whole Ship's Company rang Acclamations and Praises to me, from Stem to Stern. Mr. *Nelson's* Plantation was upon *James River*; so that when he had delivered some Part of his Cargo at *Gloucester*, we ran up, and anchored at his very Door, saluting his Family with all our Guns. Mr. *Nelson* made me dress myself in a rich Suit of Clothes, which he ordered me to provide

vide myself with at *Bridgetown*; and being, you know, no contemptible Figure, he made me a great many Compliments on the Gentility of my Person. We were rowed on Shore in the Barge, only him and myself; and he was received at his Arrival, by his Wife and Daughter, with a Tenderness that well indicated the Regard they had for so valuable a Relation. He presented me to them with these kind Expressions: "See here, "Ladies, a Man to whom I owe my Ship and "Cargo, my own Life and that of my People: "I beg you'd esteem him as a Friend of mine, "and who is going to become one of my Family." I saluted Mrs. *Nelson*, and her amiable Daughter, at whose Sight, I must confess, I directly yielded up my Heart a Prize to her Charms. They received me with great Politeness and Good-nature; and I found Mrs. *Nelson's* Temper to be pretty much a Copy of her Husband's; but, and my dear Friend, you will suffer a Lover to speak, I found Miss *Fanny*, past all my Expectations, lovely, and the Beauties of her Mind exceeded far, even those of her Person. You know, *Thompson*, that I have a good Address, and a ready Fluency of Speech; and I put myself forward in every Thing that could be agreeable to my Friend, and these Ladies; in-somuch, that *Fanny*, I believe, soon perceived me another guess Creature than the *Buckskins*, a Term the Towns-people make use of jocosely, to distinguish the Country Planters, who had made Love to her; and I flattered myself, that this first Interview gave her some Motions in my Favour. She was tall and fine shaped, her Features regular, and her delicate Skin was of the finest White that ever I beheld; she was near 19 Years of Age; and if she had any Fault, it was that of being a little affected, and too conscious

scious of the Charms Nature had given her. Mr. *Nelson* was a Justice of Peace in the County, and so respected by his Neighbours, that we had a Croud of Visitors every Day for some Time, to welcome him on his Arrival ; and determining not to go to Sea again, he put his Mate into the Vessel as Captain, and loaded him with a Cargo for *London*, soon after ; and just before he sailed, I passed a Compliment, at an Entertainment, that was made us on Board, which my young Lady took with a sensible Pleasure. I asked Mr. *Nelson*, Why he called his Vessel the *Charming Susanna* ? To which he answered, wondering at my Question, that it was the Name he bought her in, and he never had thought it worth while to alter it ; but, Sir, I beg the Favour you would re-baptize her, says I ; and, if I have found any Favour in your Sight, let me give it a Name that has a real Meaning : Agreed, says he, What shall the Name be ? I bowed to the Company, and, begging them to walk on the Quarter-deck, I stepped forward, with a Bottle of Wine in my Hand ; and dashing it against the Main-mast, cried, From henceforward, this Vessel shall be called the *Lovely Fanny*, as a just Compliment to the finest Woman in *Virginia* ! Miss blushed like Scarlet ; her Father and Mother were pleased, as well as herself, to the last Degree ; and we fired a Round of the Guns at this new Ceremony. When we came Home, whether the Liquor, which I had drank pretty freely of, or the Heat of the Weather, oppressed me, I can't tell ; but I all on a Sudden fell down, without Sense or Motion, which frightened Mr. *Nelson* and his Lady extremely ; but as to Miss, she was like one distracted, and talked so tenderly of me, before by Bleeding I was brought to my Senses, that her Father and Mother were amazed at it, and perceived I had

made a very deep Impression on her Mind. In short, my Friend, I won't trouble you with our Courtship, which tho' it yielded me the greatest Pleasure, would not be very interesting to you ; and shall only relate a Circumstance, which made a great deal in my Favour, and hastened the Match ; which was this :

We were, with her Father and Mother, in a distant County, at the Back of the Colony, paying a Visit to Mr. *Hoe*, a Planter there, whose Son, a great, senseless, *Hawbuck*, was desperately in Love with her ; and tho' she hated him, I knew, yet she permitted his Addresses, on Purpose to make me jealous, and more submissive ; and one Evening walking in a neighbouring *Savannah*, whilst she was, by Turns, raising and depressing our Hopes, for we were both with her ; and had just said, Gentlemen, I have no Opinion of a Man's Professions, that can thus live tamely with his Rival ; I should rather think Rage and Despair should engage them to fight for the Possession of what they so eagerly wish ; and I should be glad to be the first Woman in *Virginia*, that has been the Subject of a Duel ; when out issued from the Wood a dreadful large bristling *Wild Hog*, and, without Fear, made across the *Savannah*, directly opposite to us. Poor Miss screamed out and ran for Shelter, in her Hurry to young *Hoe* who had a Matchet by his Side ; but he directly scoured away in a Minute ; whilst I laughing, had Presence of Mind to halloo out to him to come and defend his Mistress, who by this Time was fallen into a Swoon. In fine, I had no Time to lose, for the Brute advanced apace, and began to grunt, like a real wild Boar, casting up his Snout, all white with Foam, into the Air, and gnashing his prominent, jaggy Tusks. I drew my

my Hanger, and made a Stroke at him that hardly penetrated his Hide, and but inflamed him the more ; and, tearing up the very Ground for Madness, he attacked me, with a Spring, and tore my Breeches up, and made a slight Wound in my left Thigh, which I immediately returned, by cleaving him at one Blow, aimed with all the Strength I was Master of, down the Skull ; and seconding it, he fell, and rose no more. *Fanny* had just recovered, and seen the latter Part of the Fight ; and now, like a *Guy of Warwick*, or a valiant *Moor of Moor-Hall*, I cut off his Head and laid it bleeding at my Mistress's Feet. The first Thing she did was to lend me her Handkerchief to bind up my Wounds ; and whilst she was doing that, observed what a Scoundrel, and Coward, her other Lover was ; adding, at the same Time, giving me her Hand, generously you have saved my Life, and therefore it is but Justice to devote it, for the Future, to your Happiness and Satisfaction. I embraced the grateful Fair One with Transport, and carried her to the House, where *Hoe* was sufficiently roasted by all present, and I was as much applauded ; so that in about six Months after this, with the Consent of both Father and Mother, I married my amiable *Fanny*, and partook of Delights, in that tender Union, that are far too great for the Power of Eloquence to describe. My Father-in-law and Mother surrendered a large Plantation to our Use, and to our inexpressible Grief, both of them deceased about half a Year ago, leaving us in actual Possession of near 30,000*l*. My Love to this dear Creature has been constantly encreasing, and she has blessed me with a lovely Boy, that is just the Picture of his Mother. If any Thing at first gave me Uneasiness, it was the observing a Coldness in my Wife's Dis-

position, which did not suit with the Warmth and Fervour of my sanguine and amorous Temper, and which I often reproached her with ; but I soon got her lovely Person, in as full Perfection, as I knew before I had her Soul.

I parted with her, to come this Voyage to settle some Affairs in *England*, with the utmost Regret ; and indeed she would have been my Comrade in it, if she was not big with Child, which would not permit me to trust her to the uncertain Dangers of the Sea ; and the Event has proved the Justness of my Judgment ; though nothing gives me Pain in the Accident that has happened to me, since it has procured me the Pleasure of seeing Mr. *Thompson*, save that it will make my Voyage somewhat longer, and thereby detain me, more than I proposed from the Arms of my dear Wife, to whose Labour I am under solemn Promise to return, if Providence permits me. I hope the Friends I have wrote to, have insured my Cargo ; but if not, the Loss, at present, won't be much to me ; and I have Bills about me, to the Value of 2000*l.* upon some of the best Merchants in *London*. And thus you see, my Friend, that I am a very happy Man ; and I do assure you, I strive, by doing all the Good in my Power to my Fellow-creatures, to return Thanks to Providence for its Blessings, and to atone for the former Irregularity of my Conduct. But now I should be glad to hear how *Speculift*, *Prig*, and the Rest of our old Acquaintance do ; and whether in Purse or Person I can serve my old Friend, and prove to him, that I am the same disinterested *Will Prim*, he formerly knew me to be.

C H A P. XLV.

He satisfies Prim in his Enquiries.—The mutual Civilities that pass between them.—They touch at one of the Cape de Verde Islands.—A Vessel puts in there also, bound to Glasgow in Scotland.—Proves to be freighted by Prim's Overseer.—He goes on Board her.—Entertains the Gentlemen from the Hastings.—They take Leave of each other, and proceed on their respective Voyages.

I WAS charmed with the frank and open Air with which Mr. *Prim* related his Adventures, and the various Difficulties and Distresses he had encountered before his fortunate and happy Settlement, and congratulated him with the utmost Sincerity; and we both observed, that many young Fellows of natural good Dispositions, and whose Minds were of a generous Cast, though they might be somewhat rakish, and pursue bad Courses; yet one Time or other, their good Sense will get the better of their Follies, and they will return to those Maxims of Virtue and Honour which they had forsaken. He was sorry for my worthy Master's Misfortunes, and was surprized at what I told him of my Friend *Diaper's* being gone to the *Indies*, saying, I think we are all turned Adventurers for my Part, but *Prig*, who holds his own Ground, and thrives in his native Country, which I am very much rejoiced at, and will call to see him. I told him, if he had any Luck in getting to *England*, that *Prig* would be in *Yorkshire*; then, Faith, says *Prim*, if you will give me a Direction, I will go and pay him a Visit there. I answered, I should do that with great Pleasure, and would recommend

recommend him to my Father's Acquaintance, and some other worthy People, to whom I would take an Opportunity to write by him, if he'd take the Trouble to carry the Letters; which, he said, he would make it his Care and Study to do; and informed me, that if his Wife would consent, he intended in a few Years to settle in his native Country, there to spend the Remainder of his Days, and hoped he should see me there too by that Time. He was very sorry for poor *Speculift*, tho', he said, he had not behaved to him very handsomely; and, being very curious to know my real Motives for going to the *East-Indies*, I related all my Misfortunes to him, at which he very tenderly sympathized with me; and attempted to speak some encouraging Words of Comfort. Let me assure you, my Friend, says he, if ever you have any Occasion, if you'll draw Bills on me, I'll pay them at Sight, for any Sum of Money you may want, and here is my Direction:—To Col. *Prim*, upon *James River*, in *Virginia*,—for you must know I am a military Man too, and command in our *Virginia* Militia, and am also in the Commission of the Peace for *James*, *York*, and *Gloucester* Counties. I thanked him for his Civility, and then opened my Wardrobe, desiring him to fit himself with what Clothes he liked best amongst them: He chose a Suit of blue Cloth with a gold Lace, and took three of my Shirts, and some other Necessaries of that Kind, having lost all, but what he had on his Back, in the late Conflagration of his Ship. He offered to give me a Bill to the Amount, but I refused it with Anger, and told him I'd trust till we saw each other in *England*. The Winds not hanging very favourably for us, Captain *Social* resolved to touch at *St. Vincent*, one of the *Cape de Verde Islands*, which we safely reached; and in a very commodious Bay came to Anchor, intending
to

to purchase some additional live Stock, and get a Recruit of fresh Water to fill our empty Casks. Here I took an Opportunity of writing to my Father and Mother, and all my good Friends in *Yorkshire*, and also to Mr. and Mrs. *Bellair* and Miss *Sukey*; all which, with proper Directions and Instructions, I confided to the Custody of Mr. *Prim*. We spent our Time very agreeably, often taking Trips to the Shore, and our new Comrades being all as agreeable as ourselves, we led a Life that was really to be envied. I shall not take up my Reader's Time in a Description of those Islands which are so well known, and of which such ample Relations are given in Books of Voyages, which may justify such Omissions in the future Course of my Adventures.

When we had lain here about two Days, a large Ship came in, which Captain *Clements* knew to be a Ship he had left in *Virginia*, commanded by Captain *Cable*; and *Prim*, he, and myself, with two or three more of our Company, went on Board her, and found that most Part of the Cargo had been shipped by Mr. *Prim*'s Overseer, and was consigned to Mr. *Ferguson*, a Merchant at *Glasgow*, on his Account. The Captain was glad to see his Freighter, and soon agreed to take him, Captain *Clements*, and the Crew of his Ship on Board, and to carry them to that Port; Mr. *Prim* engaging to pay what was thought due, over and above their working their Passage. We were entertained very nobly on Board, and soon after *Prim* and his Ship's Company removed to Captain *Cable*'s Ship, giving Captain *Social* an Indemnification for their Stay on Board of him. Two of the Hands, being willing, were entertained on Board the *Hastings*; and agreed to go to the *Indies* with Captain *Social*.

I stayed

I stayed with *Prim* in the Vessel he was going Home in, and, in a Day or two after he had left us, all the Gentlemen on Board the *Hastings* were invited to an Entertainment on Board the *York*, where we were regaled with the best the Ship could afford, and *Prim* was never tired with Captain *Clements*, of paying their Acknowledgements to us; we had our Musick with us, and spent the Day in a most agreeable Manner, making an Entertainment of the same Sort next Day for them in the *Hastings*; and *Prim* got a Pipe of *Madeira*, and some other Refreshments, which he bestowed as a Present on the Crew of our Ship, in Return for the Civilities they had shewn to his People. He also would insist upon encreasing our Stores out of the *York*, which was extremely well provided for her Voyage to *Scotland*.

Both Ships having taken in what they had Occasion for at *St. Vincent*, and the Wind serving to turn out of the Bay, we both weighed, after taking Leave of each other in the most affectionate Manner; *Prim* and myself being almost melted into Tears, at Parting. He would make me accept of a Diamond Ring, as a Token of his Love, which I returned by a Present of the like Kind; and, having a very fine Gold repeating Watch, he insisted upon making Captain *Social* a Present of it for all Favours, and he also made some very pretty Acknowledgments to the other Gentlemen of our Mess.

We both got out to Sea, and saluted each other with our Guns, and three Cheers, and their Ship was soon out of Sight.

It gave me extreme Satisfaction, that I had met with such an Opportunity of writing to my dear Friends in *England*, which I knew would in some Measure ease them of their Anxiety for my Welfare.

C H A P.

C H A P. XLVI.

They are in Danger from a Water Spout.——He is saved from a great Peril by his Servant.——Capt. Social dies.——They are driven by a Storm to the Southward.——In great Distress.——They meet with Land.——Bear up to the Cape of Good Hope.——Refit their Vessel, and proceed on their Voyage.

THIS Meeting with *Prim* spread an Ease and Calm over my Mind, that was very salutary to me ; and no one, that has not been long and tedious Voyages, can imagine how agreeable it is at a great Distance from Home to meet with a Friend or a Countryman ; you seem then to be enjoying all you have left behind you, and such an Interview stores you with a Number of pleasing Ideas and Remembrances that soften and lessen all the Fatigues you undergo. We touched at *St. Helena*, where we continued only two Days, and then run away for the Latitude of the *Cape* ; but we were surprized one Morning with the Sight of what the Seamen call a *Water Spout*, and the more so, as they are not very frequent on this Side the *Cape* ; for my Part I regarded it as a curious Instance of the Wonders of Nature, but did not indulge my Delight so far as not to be apprehensive of some Danger : We were so near, that we could see the Water ascend thro' this Column of Air, and were obliged to tack, to avoid any ill Consequences that might arise from its breaking, which, at the Discharge of a Swivel, it did, curling the Ocean with a white Foam as far as Eye could reach. It was merry enough to hear the superstitious Reasonings of the Sailors upon this Phænomenon ;

Phænomenon; I looked upon it as one of those natural Events, that illustrate and demonstrate the Truth of the new Philosophy. I was attentively viewing its Disappearance, and for that Purpose had stretched myself further than ordinary out of one of the Cabbin Windows, when the Ship sent an Head so violently, that I was suddenly cast out a Prey to the Waves: I bestirred myself, after the first Surprise was over, and began to swim after the Vessel, which made considerable Way; and was in the utmost Terror, as I happened to be the only one in the Cabbin, at the Thought of being left by them; but luckily *Truman*, my Man, casting his Eyes abroad, discovered me struggling with the Billows, and making what Efforts I could to raise my Head above Water, in such a Manner as to be perceived: He knew me, and, telling the next Person to him of what he had seen, immediately jumped over Board to my Assistance. He was an excellent Swimmer, and soon came up to me, where I was almost spent with Labour and overcome with Despair; and, slipping under me, supported me on his Back, 'till, the Ship being sufficiently now alarmed, the Sails were backed, a Boat put out, and we were taken up more dead than alive, and carried on Board. We soon came to ourselves, and every one congratulated my Deliverance; and I was so struck with this Action of *Truman's*, that I thought I could not acknowledge his Affection and Attachment too much; and from this Time I gave him a more respectful Treatment, made him Superintendent of all my Affairs, and, finding him a Man of as good an Head as he had an Heart, I seldom resolved on any Thing, without first asking his Advice; and by this faithful Servant I reaped many Advantages, as will be perceived in the following Part of my Adventures.

Poor

Poor Captain *Social* was attacked, about this Time, with the Gout in his Stomach, which he had for a Series of Years been afflicted with, in so violent a Manner, that, notwithstanding all the Assistance of our Surgeon, a Paroxysm carried him off, to the great Regret of every body on Board, as he was truly an excellent Seaman, a vigilant Commander, and a Gentleman of great good Temper and Humanity. He was succeeded, in the Command of the *Hastings*, by Mr. *Bentley*, our first Mate, whose good Qualities could alone console us for our Loss. The Death of our Captain was followed by a violent Storm, which met us in Longitude 109. West, and Latitude 30°. 8'. South, and continued without Intermission for 14 Days; so that our People being all jaded and tired, our Ship tried an Hull, and drove at the Mercy of Winds and Waves, and, by our Reckonings, far to the South of our true Course. It was now I began to conceive and feel the Miseries and Hardships of a Sea-faring Life, and for most Part of the Time, as we could light no Fires, we were forced to content ourselves with Biscuit, and such cold Stores, as we had by us, to satisfy our Hunger; being also forced to keep close in our Cabbins, for the most experienced Seamen could very difficultly stand the Deck. The tenth Day, whilst the Waves rolled over us, and burst upon us with a Fury that made us apprehend every Minute we should founder, our Foremast was brought by the Board, and it was with Difficulty we cleared ourselves of her, Time enough to prevent the Damage we feared it would do us; and we had no sooner got over that Distress, than one of our Guns of the lower Tier broke loose, and we were apprehensive she would by her forceful Sal- lies, break through the Ship's Sides; in short we were all Confusion, but the Captain, who, with a commendable

commendable Presence of Mind, ordered up all the Hammocks and Beddings, and so providentially chocked her up, that we found the Danger quite over. When the Storm, in some Measure, subsided, we found ourselves in Latitude 50° , and some Minutes South, and as near as we could guess in Longitude $110^{\circ} 15'$, East of the Meridian of *London*, in the vast and unploughed Southern Ocean; and, a Calm succeeding of many Days, our Water grew so scanty, that we were reduced to Half a Pint a Day; and, to add to our Calamity, above Half the Ship's Crew were eaten up with the Scurvy, and our fresh Provisions were so low, that what we spared to them, was not sufficient to be of much Service in that dreadful Distemper; but how surprized were we one Morning, when a Man at the Mast-head, cried out, *Land! Land!* and sounding, we found fifty Fathom Water: We were at a Loss to imagine what Land this could be, which bore from us South-east, till Mr. Bentley, in one of his Charts, found a Cape, which was there called *Cape Circumcision*, and was a very late Discovery. I must own, just at that Moment, I was in Hopes our Commander would send a Boat to discover the Coast; but, a southerly Wind springing up, he took the Advantage of it, and stood away to the North-westward, which Course in a few Days Time brought us safely into *Saldana Bay* at the *Cape of Good-Hope*, to our inexpressible Joy and Satisfaction. Here our Men were soon recovered of their Toil and Illness, and I received great Pleasure in viewing the fine Settlements of the industrious *Dutch*, at the Cape, who have made a Paradise of the Country the *English* despised, and all other Nations looked upon with the utmost Distaste. The Natives themselves, who seemed hardened to all the Maxims of human Creatures,

Creatures, now, under their Government, begin to associate together and form Societies; that are a plain Proof the wildest Natures may be cultivated, if proper Methods are employed. We lay here near three Weeks, and, having taken in proper Provisions and Refreshments for the further Part of our Voyage, we weighed, with one *French* and two *Dutch* Ships in Company, and with a fine Gale, and delightful Weather, doubled this famous Promontory and entered the *Indian Ocean*.

C H A P. XLVII. °

They are obliged to put into the Island of Java.—Sail from thence, and arrive at Fort St. George on the Coast of Coromandel.—He is well received.—Falls ill.—Recovers, and applies himself assiduously to the Duties of his Profession.—Receives Letters from England.

WE pursued our Voyage thro' this delightful Sea for several Days, with all the Success we could desire, and methinks nothing can equal the Pleasure we experienced: Still quiet Gales filled our steady Sails, the Vessel gently gliding thro' the Waves, and, if the Heat was almost intolerable, we were compensated, by having little else to do than to look Abroad, and survey the fine Skies, and the smooth Face of the Ocean, curled into meandring Forms by the sliding Keel. An infinite Number of *Sheerwaters* and other Birds of the aquatic Kind, attended our Progress; the timorous flying Fish, pursued by the devouring *Albicores*, now and then skimmed over us, whilst the sportive *Porpoise*, tumbling with uncouth Postures, basked every now and then on the Surface of the Waters. This Weather did
not

not however continue a great while, and was followed by a smarter Gale at North-east than we could well expect; so that we were driven a great Way to Leeward, and our Captain thought it adviseable to try to stretch over, either to fall in with the Island of *Sumatra* or *Java*; which last we safely reached, and anchored in the Port of *Batavia*, the Capital of the *Dutch* Empire in this Part of the World; where we were visited by the proper Officers, who continued on Board of us to prevent any illicit Trade, as few of our outward-bound *Indiamen* ever touch at their Settlements in this Country. However, considering *Dutch* Craft and Policy, we were tolerably well used, permitted to buy such Things as were necessary for us, and to go on Shore. Nothing is a greater Proof of the Opulence of their Company, and their Power in the *East-Indies*, than this City, which has in it all the Conveniencies and Pleasures this Part of the World can afford; and it is surprizing to what an Height they have raised themselves, by Perseverance and absolute Industry, in such a few Years, as those since they applied themselves so indefatigably to this Trade. The *Dutch Governor General* lives like a Prince, and exacts and receives more Homage than the *States General* themselves, do from their Subjects in *Europe*. We lay here only three Days and half, and then put to Sea with the Wind at *S. W.* which still shifting more favourably, we entered the Harbour of *Fort St. George*, after a tedious and fatiguing Voyage of near seven Months, saluting the Fort, which was returned by the like Compliment. We landed the next Day, and waited on the Governor, by whom we were very politely received; and I was also visited, and congratulated on my Arrival by the rest of the Gentlemen and Factors of the Place, which much exceeded the Ideas I had entertained
of

of it. *Fort St. George* is a very handsome strong Building, but sadly situated, the Soil being very sandy and dry, so that all Roots and Herbs are brought to Perfection with a great deal of Trouble : The Sea rolls very impetuously upon the Shore, and more so than any other Place on the Coast of *Coromandel*. The white or *European* Towns, has two Churches, one for the *English*, the other for the *Roman Catholics*; I hired a Lodging in what they call the *Old College*, which was but a footy Kind of Dwelling ; but I found many other Gentlemen Factors there, which made me tolerable easy. It is governed by a *Mayor* and *Aldermen*. The black Town is inhabited by *Gentows*, *Mabometans*, *Armenians*, and *Portugueze*, and has Temples and Churches for each Religion. The Company have a Mint, and there are several Publick Schools in the Town. The Governor is the supreme Magistrate, and has a Council, composed generally of Factors and Merchants, with whom he consults on the Company's Concerns. The Colony has very little of its own Produce or Manufactures, for Foreign Markets; and the Trade is principally in the Hands of the *Armenians* and *Jews*, the *English* being greatly employed in Ship-building. There are supposed to be 80,000 Inhabitants in the Towns and Villages, under the Company's Jurisdiction ; and there are about 500 *English* amongst them, as Gentlemen, Merchants, Seamen, and Soldiers. People enjoy a great Share of Health here, and look brisk and ruddy ; the Heats in Summer being the greatest Trouble and Inconvenience they labour under ; but that seldom lasts above four or five Hours a Day, when the Sea Breeze comes on, and revives the drooping Spirits of the panting Inhabitants. The Governor has an handsome Country-seat with good Gardens,

Gardens, a Bowling-green, a Teal-pond, and other agreeable Curiosities. He is attended by a Guard of *English* Soldiers, whenever he goes Abroad; and lives in Princely State and Grandeur. So much for Description, which is a little beside my Design; but I thought I could not excuse myself from saying somewhat of a Place in which I spent some Years of my Life, and laid the Foundation of my present Happiness.

Soon after my Arrival, I had the Misfortune to be taken ill, with a violent Fever, peculiar to the Climate, which held me a considerable Time, and brought me almost to Death's Door; but the Care of my Physician, who was the Surgeon of the *Hastings*, a very worthy and ingenious Man, and skilful in either Profession; and the constant, affectionate Attendance of *Trueman*, together with the Strength of my Constitution, overcame my Disorder, and, as soon as I was well, I applied myself with all the Assiduity I was capable of, to make myself Master of the Manner of Trade in these Countries, and the Nature of the Business I was to transact; in which I was very much assisted by Mr. *William Saris*, another Factor, who had some Time resided there, and was nearly of my own Age and Temper, with whom I contracted a very intimate and close Friendship; so that I soon began to move about in the Sphere Fortune had allotted to me, with becoming Spirit and Industry; and was universally carested by both Superiors and Equals. I had, in a Month after my Arrival, the Pleasure of Letters from my Father, and other Friends in *England*, by a Ship that sailed a Fortnight after us, which indeed gave me no Account of any Thing that had happened extraordinary; but was a pleasing Proof of my Friends Punctuality in writing to me.

C H A P.

C H A P. XLVIII.

He sends Truman on a Trading Voyage.—Receives great Advantages from it.—Sends him to the Diamond Mines.—Is ordered on the Company's Affairs to Surat.—Executes his Commission with Success.—Is ordered up to Hughly.—In great Danger and Distress on the Island of Sagar.—Providentially relieved.—Returns to Fort St. George.

I WAS near six Months in the Country before I ventured to turn what Money I brought with me, which was between 3 and 4000 *l.* of my own and Mr. *Goodwill's*, to any Advantage ; in all which Time, however, I endeavoured to improve, by the Experience I acquired, from Observation and Converse, particularly with my Friend *Saris* ; and as I was willing to avoid any Imputation of preferring my own Interest before that of the Company, or indeed of interfering in private Trade, I kept *Truman* about me, in the Nature of a Friend, who had come to improve his Fortune ; and at length determined to provide him with a Cargo, and send him in one of the Country Ships, on a trading Voyage, to the Coast of *Persia* ; and *Saris* also wanting to be concerned, he advanced a proper Cargo ; and for *Truman's* better Encouragement, who was a Man of Solidity and good Sense, we agreed to pay him a certain Sum for Agency ; and I advanced him 200 *l.* to risque on his own Account ; so giving him proper Instructions, we sent him away. He was five Months in executing his Commission, which he did with great Dexterity and equal Fidelity. The Wines, and other Returns, he brought, were disposed of to such Advantage, that I found myself near 100 *l.* Gainer ; and Mr. *Saris*
was

was upwards of 300 Rupees the better. His own Venture procured double, and he paid me the 200 *l.* having with his Agency cleared near 300 *l. Sterling*; which gave me infinite Pleasure, as I was resolved, if possible, to make his Fortune, before he left the *Indies*, with me; and he had shewed himself so much a Man of Spirit and Genius in this Affair, that afterwards both myself and *Saris* approved of any Thing he proposed for our Profit, and never found ourselves deceived. He was soon after quite enamoured of a Scheme he had formed of making a Tour to the *Diamond Mines*, which we accordingly furnished him properly for, and understood, by a Letter we received from him a Fortnight after his Departure, that he had hired so many *Covets* of Ground, inclosed it, and had begun to dig, as is the Custom, surrounded by the King of *Golconda's* Centinels, who challenges all Stones, of above 60 Grains, as his own, the Adventurer having all the rest he finds.

We entertained great Hopes from the good Fortune that we generally found attended *Truman*, that this Expedition would turn very much to Account; but, before we heard again, I was ordered on my Employers Affairs, to transact some Business at *Surat*, and was obliged to go over Land to that City; which gave me great Pleasure, as I wanted to satisfy my Curiosity, in visiting the inferior Parts of the Country, The Goods I had with me were loaded on Oxen, an Ox being able to carry between three and four hundred Weight; and for myself, as soon as I came to *Massulipatan*, I hired a *Palanquin*, or little Coach, with Ballustres about it; it had a Covering of Sattin; a Slave attends to manage the Covering, according to the Traveller's Position, as to the Sun; and another carried a *Targot*, or a Fan of Osiers, covered

covered with Stuff, to keep off its Heat; it is carried by three or four Men on their Shoulders, who go as swift as the Chairmen in *England* do with a Sedan, from being brought up to the laborious Exercise from their Youth. They are paid at the Rate of five golden Rupees *per* Month, for each Man; but if they continue with you, after a limited Time, they will encrease the Price. I was very well provided with Provisions; for in the *Banjan Towns* we had Flour, Rice, Milk, and such other Food; and in those of the *Mahometans*, Mutton, Fowls, and Pigeons; and, as the Heat of the Sun was excessive, I generally contrived to travel after Sun-set, and lie by in the most sultry Part of the Day; by which I preserved myself from Illness, for I found my Spirits greatly jaded and fatigued, by the excessive Warmth of the Climate. They measure their Distance by Leagues, or by a Measure they call *Gos*, which is equal to four Leagues of ours. I arrived at *Golconda* in about a Fortnight, which is a very large City, under its own Monarch, who is tributary to the *Great Mogul*. I saw this potent Prince, who can raise an Army of 600,000 Men; and what I most admired about him, was a Diamond, of above half a Foot long, upon the Crown of his Head: From *Golconda* I journied to *Visapour*, which is above 300 Leagues distant from it, and from thence to *Bicholly*, and thence to the *Portuguese* Island of *Goa*, on which stands their famous City, the Capital of their Possessions, and the Scene of so many brave and heroic Acts as were performed by the *Alburquerque*s, and the rest of those great Men that first fixed them in this Part of the World; but they were now dwindled to a bare Shadow of what they formerly were, and are, at the same Time, the Scorn and Victims to the Cunning

of every other Nation settled since in the *Indies*. From *Goa*, after seeing every Thing that was esteemed curious, partly by Land, and partly by Water, I arrived at *Surat*, to my entire Content, after a Journey, which, tho' it gave me such Opportunities as are very agreeable to a curious and inquisitive Man, yet almost tired me to Death. This is the only Port in the *Mogul's* Dominions, and is inhabited by a promiscuous Medley of *Moguls*, *Persians*, *Arabians*, *Turks*, *Persees*, or *Gaurs*, and *Franks*, or *European Christians*, whose Number, however, is not very considerable. I was well received by the *English* Factory, and, after transacting the Business I came about, partook of the Diversions and Amusements of the Place, and made a thorough Inspection into every Thing in *Surat*, and the Country adjacent. This City may be reckoned the great Mart of the *Indies*, and where all the *Chinese* and *European* Commodities may be had in great Plenty. I took a Passage from hence to *Bombay*, the chief of our Forts on this Coast; and from thence sailed in a Jonk to *Fort St. George*, where I arrived in about ten Weeks afterwards, giving a satisfactory Account of the Execution of my Commission to the Governor. Soon after my Arrival, I was ordered on another Affair of Importance, up to *Hugly* Factory, to which I departed in a small Vessel, with two or three *Gentow* Mariners. This Factory is situated on a River of that Name, which is a Branch of the famous *Ganges*. When I arrived at *Fort William*, after having delivered my Credentials, I was received into the Factory in a very friendly Manner; and, notwithstanding a good deal of Chicanry, and ill Usage, from some Persons in Authority, I found Means to finish what I came about, with Honour;

Honour ; and also to do myself some private Services in the Way of Traffic, upon my own Bottom ; and took my Departure, with Tokens of Respect from all the Gentlemen there. In coming down the River, I had a great Fancy to put into the Island *Sagar*, tho' I had heard it was much infested with Tygers, who are very fierce, and the Seamen did all they could to persuade me from it : However, we brought too, and arming myself with a Matchet and Firelock, and several Charges of Powder and Ball, I left the Vessel, and resolutely determined to face any Danger that might happen in the Gratification of my Curiosity ; and the more so, as the Island is reckoned holy amongst the *Pagans*, Numbers of *Jougies* going there, the latter End of every Year, - to worship. The Island is full of Bushes and *Mangroves* ; and I was no sooner on Shore, than my People rowed the Canoe out again, and stood over, full of Affright, to *Rogues River*, where I saw them come to an Anchor. I was not very well pleased at this ; but, looking upon their Fear as a Piece of Superstition, I advanced into the Island, and came without Interruption to a *Savanab*, about half a Mile from the Place I landed at, which was dry and parched up ; but I had no sooner got over, it, than casting my View, forwards, I perceived no less than four glaring fiery Eyes, directed towards me, thro' the Bushes, and presently concluded they were the Creatures I had heard so much Talk of ; nor had I Time for much Consideration, for, setting up an infernal Howl, they both made at me, with all the Fierceness their savage Natures and Hunger could inspire. I must own I was greatly shocked and frightened, and had only just Presence of Mind sufficient to recollect, that I had no Way to secure

G 2

myself,

myself, if my Piece missed Fire ; and, as I could not have Time to charge again, if I did not dispatch the remaining Beast with my Matchet. I had heard of wonderful Escapes made from wild Beasts, by the native Terror they feel in hearing the human Voice elevated, and therefore I gave as loud a Shout as I could, and, at the same Time, fired my Piece, and, very providentially, shot one of my Antagonists thro' the Head ; the other stood some Time in a Kind of Astonishment, at the Flash and Report of my Piece ; but soon made a Spring at me, with redoubled Fury. If I was capable of indulging any Reflection at this Time, it was to curse my foolish Curiosity that brought me into such imminent Peril and Danger ; and I really gave myself over for lost : However, not to be wanting to my Defence, I gave a forceable Stroke with my Matchet, and cut off one of the Brute's fore Feet ; at which he set up such a hideous Yell, that the Island and shore around reverberated back the Sound, which was continued by such an Infinity of Echoes, that my Hair stood upright on my Head : He made a second Spring, and, more lucky than the first Time, I clove him down the Skull, and he fell, the black, inflamed Gore running from him in purple Streams. Immediately snatching up my Musquet, I made all the Haste my Legs would permit me to the Place I landed at ; and, waving my Handkerchief, the People took Notice of the Signal, and the Canoe came just Time enough to save me from a fresh Attack, Numbers of Tygers following us even into the Water, two of the foremost of which we dispatched with our Fire-arms. I looked upon what I had undergone, as a just Punishment for my Rashness, and determined, for the future, never

never to hazard myself in so idle and ridiculous a Manner. As soon as we got on Board, where they never expected to see me again, we stood into the Bay ; and, after touching at *Ballafore*, *Visagipatan*, and some other Factories, where I left some Dispatches that were given me from *Fort William*, I safely landed with my Goods at *Fort St. George*, whence I had been longer absent than it was supposed I should be. My Friend *Saris* now advised that we should leave our present Lodging, and therefore, with the Governor's Leave, with whom I stood in high Favour, we took an House in the white Town, and hired proper Servants, resolving to live together, as long as we staid in the Country.

C H A P. XLIX.

They receive certain Advices from Truman, who desires to be recalled. — He arrives with great Gains from the Mines. — Gives his Master a very valuable Stone. — Method he takes to conceal it. — He receives more Letters from England. — Their Contents. — Writes to Mr. Goodwill for a particular Reason.

WE had heard but once from *Truman* since he left us, which gave us some Pain, as fearing some Accident might have happened to him ; but, just as we were going to dispatch an Express to see what was become of him, one of his Slaves arrived with the following Letter :

Honoured SIR,

I HAVE been employed for you very much to the Purpose, and tho' I have had my Health but badly, yet I need not be ashamed of the Acquisitions I have made, and therefore, if you think I have been long enough employed here, should be glad of your Orders to return to *Fort St. George*. I have inclosed a List of the most valuable Stones I met with, which are clear from all Deductions or Charges to the King or his Officers. I am at present at *Golconda*, where I have also purchased some Stones; but I have a very particular Reason to desire my Recall, which I cannot trust to this Letter, and am, after Compliments to Mr. *Saris*,

Honoured SIR,

Your obliged, affectionate, and faithful Servant,

WILL. TRUMAN.

By his subjoined List and Account, we had indeed great Reason to be satisfied with his Pains, computing that he had gained on my Account to the Value of near four thousand Pounds, and above one thousand for Mr. *Saris*; so that, eager to see the honest Creature, I sent him Orders to set out, as soon as they came to Hand, sending them by a trusty Servant of my own, who went along with his Messenger, and in about three Weeks afterwards he arrived; but so altered by his Fatigues, and the Heats he had endured, that we hardly knew him. I caressed him with the utmost Affection, for I really began to esteem him rather as a Brother than any Thing else. He delivered

to us our respective Quota's, mine amounting to several Pounds Weight of small Stones, of divers Sizes, which I knew would turn to an extreme good Account, either here or in *Europe*. He had also made a considerable deal of Profit himself, so that he might now be said to be possessed in his own Right of little less than a thousand Pounds; and I obliged him to accept of two hundred Pounds, as Mr. *Saris* did of fifty, in Recompence for his unwearied Pains and Diligence. The first Opportunity we had to be alone, we settled our particular Accounts, which I found justly and fairly stated and balanced; and then, smiling he told me, that he had somewhat still that was my Property, that he hoped would soon, with other Things, conduce to carry me from these uncomfortable Parts of the World; for, dear Sir, I can't help longing to see my old Master and Mistress, and our Friends in *Yorkshire*, who, no doubt are already impatient enough of your Absence; and, so saying, he pulled out of a Leathern Purse, which was sewed to the Waistband of his Breeches, a Diamond of a Size and Lustre, that amazed me so much with its Brightness, as for some Time robbed me of Speech; and at length when I hugged him in my Arms, and asked him by what good Fortune he got so valuable a Prize, he gave me the following Account: I was more than ordinary attentive, Sir, to inspect all the Soil my Labourers removed, and for that Purpose hardly gave myself even Time for Rest; and being pretty generous of my Money, and what Provisions and Refreshments I had about me, to the King's Overseers, as well as my own People; they did not so strictly watch my Actions as they did those of other Undertakers: One Day I thought I perceived somewhat of a larger Bulk, than ordinary shine thro' the Sand, but took no

Notice ; and when all Eyes were employed another Way, I stooped, and put what I suspected to be so valuable into my Pocket, and retiring to a Stream at a Distance, which was shaded by some Trees, and where I generally retired in the Heat of the Day, I examined, and found, amongst a Cluster of small Stones, this very Diamond ; I was fearful of a Discovery, as it was of a Size far superior to those we were allowed to take away, and therefore immediately sewed it up again in my Breeches, in the Manner you have seen ; and, thank God, brought it safely away with me, and wish it was more valuable than it is, that by presenting it to you, it might be a greater Instance of my Gratitude to your Family, and my Zeal and Affection in your Service. I made him a noble Present and took it into my Custody, we both, according to the best of our Skill, imagining it to be worth above 20,000 *l.* so that with what I had acquired other Ways, I might be deemed a sudden very rich Man. Our next Care was to contrive how to secure and conceal it from all Eyes till the Time when we could return to *Europe* arrived ; and at last, I hit upon a Project of hollowing the Heels of an ordinary Pair of Shoes, in such a Manner as to contain it in the Cavity under the upper Heel-piece ; which we did so, that it was impossible for any one to discover what had been done ; and so cautious I was, that I determined to keep it a Secret, even to my Friend *Sarris* himself. If the Thoughts of my dearest *Louisa* had not now, even and anon, intervened, I should have esteemed myself a very happy Man ; but whenever her Remembrance crossed my Mind, as it frequently would, all the Acquisitions I made were Matters of Grief to me, as I was sure I could never enjoy them with my lovely charming

ing Maid, now no more an Inhabitant of these mortal Regions of Misery. If I had any Satisfaction in the View of being returned to *England*, in Wealth and Splendor, it flowed from the Regard I had to my Parents Gratification, the Joy of my Friends, and the Good of the Indigent and Unhappy.

We had been settled here four Years, and, tho' I took Care to write Home by every Conveyance, yet I had received no Return, which gave me the most touching Pain and Uneasiness; for I looked upon the Advices I had received at my first Arrival, as of no great Importance, being dispatched so soon after my Departure. I knew the Punctuality of my Friends too well to doubt their Writing to me by every Opportunity that offered, and therefore, unless Death or Sicknes had happened, I was sensible their Letters must some how or other have miscarried. In short, the Concern I was under gave me no Rest; and *Truman* was almost as much grieved as myself, for he had as much Love for my Father and Mother, as if they had really been his own. Whilst we were in this Dependency, the Arrival of a Ship from *England* cheered our Hearts, bringing us Letters of a very fresh Date from all the Persons I so dearly loved. They mentioned their having wrote often before, so that I concluded they had sent by Ships bound to other Parts of *Asia*, and that the Letters might miscarry in the Country Vessels they were sent to me in, or in the Carriage over Land. My Father, Mother, and all my Friends were in Health, for which I returned sincere Thanks to the Almighty; and my Friend Mr. *Diaper*, to my great Joy, had been Home, from two Voyages, and was then gone out upon his third, and had acquired a very considerable Fortune. He was to the last Degree sur-

prized to hear, that I was gone to the same Part of the World he came from, and tenderly concerned that the Distance of the Scene of his Voyages from the Place I was settled at, rendered a Correspondence or Interview impossible, unless by meer Accident. His lovely Mistress and her Family were well, and, at his Return from his present Voyage, he intended to settle in *England*, and enter into the happy Union he had so long sighed after : All these Particulars I received in a Letter from old Mr. *Diaper*, and *Prig* gave me a long Account of *Prim's* Behaviour in *Yorkshire*, where he came down with my Letters, and to see him, and gave them the greatest Satisfaction in the Knowledge of his having seen me, and brought Tidings from me. He had carried himself, whilst in *England*, with so much Honour and Generosity, as to wipe out all Suggestions to his Prejudice, and to gain the Love of of my Father, and all he conversed with ; and they expected him, by every Ship that came from *Virginia*, with his Family, to settle there. I took the Opportunity, upon the Return of the Ship that brought those Letters, to write Answers to them, and particularly wrote to Mr. *Goodwill*, to get me an Order from the Directors to come Home, whenever it suited my Inclination or Desires ; for, by the Time I should receive it, I did not doubt but I should be eagerly fond of returning to my native Country, after which I sent many a rending Sigh, that came from the Bottom of my Heart, crying often, in the Height of my passionate Remembrances,

*Ah, may I yet revisit thee once more !
Once more survey thy Thames' unequal'd
Tow'rs !*

Or

*Or thro' thy fruitful Vales transported stray :
Bask under those lov'd Shades I us'd to baunt,
Secure from scorching Heats, benumbing Dews,
And all th' inclement Rage of Eastern Skies !*

*—But ah ! Louisa, thou art ever fled,
And Joy returns not to this tortur'd Breast !*

C H A P. L.

He has farther good Fortune.—Observes the settled Melancholy of Mr. Saris.—Endeavours to sooth his Disquiet.—Discovers somewhat of the Cause of his Affliction.—He induces him to relate his unhappy Story.

SEVERAL Things I, after this Adventure of the Diamond Mines, undertook, with the Assistance of *Truman*, had a like good Success, so that, at the End of five Years, I found myself worth above 35,000 *l.* supposing my great Jewel to be worth no more than 15,000 *l.* which was the lowest Value I could put upon it ; and all this Success accrued to us without subjecting me to Envy or Reproach, seeing I took all the Care in the World to merit every body's Esteem, and to execute faithfully the Orders of my Principals. *Truman* was looked upon as a Relation of mine, and most of our Riches were supposed to belong to him, which Opinion we did all in our Power to keep up. As to Mr. *Saris*, he had brought but a small Fortune with him ; but had, however, by the Opportunities my Money gave him of good Markets, raised it too 11,000 *l.* and, as to *Truman*, he had of his own above 2500 *l.* which he looked upon as sufficient for him to live happily upon the Remainder of his Days : In short, we all thought ourselves

ourselves very happy, and were, unlike the Generality of Merchants, content, nor desired, by still accumulating more Money, to tempt Fortune too far, and bring upon ourselves a Reverse of Luck, which, could we get safely to *Europe*, we thought ourselves out of the Power of. Mr. *Saris* and myself lived in the utmost Harmony, and were complimented with the Epithet of the Brother Factors; and I must own his Temper was so amiable, his Notions of Things so just, and his Actions so disinterested and honourable, that I felt for him as great an Affection as I had ever done for any Man but my Friend *Diaper*, whom I could not help fancying he was very much like; but it gave me some Uneasiness to perceive, as I had constantly done, a Gloom and Melancholy spread over his Countenance, that for my Life I had not been able to fathom the Meaning of: He disliked much Company, and shewed a Dislike at being among the Ladies, which, tho' it humoured my Disposition, yet I could not imagine he had the same Motives for that I had. I used all the Art I was a Master of to dissipate this Chagrine, and, that failing, did all I could to learn the Occasion of it: To engage him to disclose himself, at Times I gave him my own History, at the Recital of which, he expressed a great deal of Concern, but still continued silent, as to what affected himself. We frequently diverted ourselves, according to the Custom of the Place, in visiting our Neighbours, and going Abroad in the Country in our *Palanquins*; sometimes our Books, of which, as I observed before, I had a large Collection, made our Entertainment at Home in our vacant Hours, and at other Times Music or Back-gammon killed our tedious Moments. A brisk young Lady, the Widow

dow of an *English* Merchant and very rich, fell in Love with *Saris*; and it was a great Surprize to me and every one, considering that People here stick at nothing to make their Fortunes, to see this young Gentleman not only cold upon the Occasion, but when a Proposal of Marriage was made to him, he absolutely, tho' genteelly, refused the Offer. I thought it so much to his Advantage, that I should be wanting to Friendship, if I did not do all I could to persuade him into it; but with a Sigh, he told me, if I knew the Reasons he had never more to think of the Sex, I would excuse him; and, to free himself from my Importunities, he one Evening told me, he could no longer refuse to gratify my Curiosity by a Detail of his Story, how much soever he might suffer in the Recital, and, without waiting my Reply, began thus.

The STORY of Mr. SARIS;

O R,

The Unhappy Husband, and Cruel Father-in-Law.

WHEN I reflect on the Ills I have suffered, in the few Years I have seen of Life, it amazes me, that I have supported myself from Death or Distraction; for I can't forbear to exclaim, that sure, of all Men, I am the most unhappy. I am a native of the Kingdom of *Ireland*, and my true Name is not *Saris*, but *Fitzgerald*; having altered it, when I left that Country, that the Repetition of it might not administer to the Remembrance of my Misfortunes. My Mother, who was reckoned a Beauty, was of a very illustrious Family, in the County of *Cavan*, but was basely

basely betrayed by a Promise of Marriage from a Nobleman of distinguished Rank ; and I was the unhappy Fruits of an Amour, of which she repented to her dying Hour. She had an independent Fortune, and therefore the Falseness of her Lover, who basely married another, soon after I was born, did not subject her to the Frowns or ill Usage of her Friends and Relations ; and she was so privately delivered of me, at a Farm-House in a distant County, that the Secret her of Miscarriage was known to very few. She resisted all Overtures of altering her Condition after this, tho' many very advantageous Proposals were made her ; often telling those that were in her Confidence, that, tho' the Wretch, who had wronged her, had acted so meanly, she still thought herself married in the Sight of Heaven, and would never violate those Engagements. She solely applied herself to my Education ; and her extreme Fondness for me was repaid by a like Affection, and such Progress in all that I was put to learn, as gave her inconceivable Delight. She was a Woman of a noble and generous Soul, and would never hear her Betrayer mentioned ; and studiously avoided every Place it was likely to see him in : To me she never made a Secret of my Birth, telling me that I must make Amends for my Mother's Folly, by acquiring worthy and honourable Sentiments, and, qualifying myself to serve Mankind, wipe out the vulgar Prejudices they might imbibe, which would, no Doubt, level their Force against me. My Father, whom I was never permitted to see, died when I was ten Years old, leaving to a Son, by his second Marriage, for so I must call it, his Title and Estates, subject to an Annuity of 400 *l.* a Year, payable to my Mother, as an Expiation
of

his Crime, and a Token of his Repentance, for so he expressed it in the Will he left behind him, and to me 2000*l.* My Mother was so struck with this Instance of his Regard, that she forgot his Faults, and mourned his Death, as if she had been his Widow; and tho' she lived till I was sixteen, yet she carried a Load at her Heart, that threw her into a deep Consumption, and, in fine, carried her off, to my excessive Regret, in the 35th Year of her Age, leaving me in the Guardianship of Sir *Thomas Bourk*, with an Estate of 500*l.* *per Ann.* and the 2000*l.* I have before-mentioned. I went to live with that Gentleman, till I was properly qualified for the University, and then went to pursue my Studies at *Trinity College* in *Dublin*, where I remained till my 20th Year, and made no small Improvement in Letters: From thence I went to reside for some Time at *Paris*, where I learnt the Language, and all those Exercises and Accomplishments necessary to a young Gentleman, who would push his Fortune in the World; and returned at the End of a Twelvemonth, to my native Country. Sir *Thomas* received me with the utmost Kindness; and I determined to stay with him till I had procured a Commission in the Army, for to that Way of Life my Genius particularly led me. This Gentleman was a Widower, of 50 Years of Age, well made; and having always lived in the polite World, carried an Air of Distinction about him in every Thing he said or did; and I thought myself happy in his Conversation; and he, on his Part let me perceive that he had for me the Affection of a Father. The next Seat to ours was that of Mr. *Maloney*, a Gentleman of a quite different Disposition, a Brute by Nature, and whom mere Accident had given the Possession

Possession of a large Estate too ; he was litigious and spiteful, the Dread of his Neighbours, the Tyrant of his Tenants, and the Plague and Tormentor of his Family : His *Raps*, as the *Peasants* are called in *Ireland*, hated him mortally ; and, but for the Virtues of a lovely and charming Daughter, then in the 18th Year of her Age, he would have lived in a Desert, none of his Neighbours caring to converse with him. This Lady had all the Perfections of Body and Mind that could adorn the Sex ; and such a Fund of Charity and Humanity, that the whole Country rung her Praises. I had never seen her, tho' my Curiosity was greatly excited by the Reports of her Beauty and good Sense, but one Evening, as we were returning from Hunting, we met her going Home in a Chaise ; and Sir *Thomas* giving me the Hint, who she was, I regarded her with a fixed Attention, and never took off my Eyes, 'till alas ! her Image had made too deep an Impression on my Heart, ever to be removed. We complimented her, which she returned in so engaging and complaisant a Manner, and with such a good-natured Condescension, that she finished her Conquest ; and I returned Home so thoughtful and pensive, that Sir *Thomas* told me, smiling, It was proper I should pay a Visit to *Maloney*, which would yield me a proper Antidote against the Charms of his Daughter. In a Word, after this, I had no Rest, and was continually proposing Schemes to myself of being introduced to her again ; when Sir *Thomas* informed me that *Maloney* had very ill-naturedly confined one of the *Raps*, for pursuing the Game over his Manor ; and told me he would make me his Agent, to bring him to Reason, by which I might have an Opportunity to see Miss *Jenny*. I jumped at the Proposal ; and receiving proper Instructions, set out
on

on my Embassy. 'Twas about a Mile from our House ; and when I came to the Gate, I knocked near a Quarter of an Hour before any body answered me ; at length a surly Fellow, preceded by a Mastiff, who had not a worse Look than himself, enquired my Business. I bid him acquaint his Master, that I begged to see him, and that I had somewhat to say to him from Sir *Thomas Bourk* ; the Fellow made not a Word of Reply, but, with a scouling Look, retired into the House, crying, as he went off, Here, *Towzer*, come along. In some Time after he came again, and, opening the Gate, told me, in the same surly Manner, That his Master was in the Parlour, and, if I wanted him, I must go that Way, directing me with a Nod of his Head. I entered the House, and, seeing a Door open to my Right, went in, and found my Gentleman wrapped up in Flannels, having got a Fit of the Gout, and his sweet Daughter working with her Needle, at the other End of the Room. So, I know your Business, he cried ; and you may tell Sir *Thomas* that I'll pursue the Law ; and, if I had been able, I'd have tied his Rascal to a Tree, and shot him dead, for his Insolence ! He went on in this wild Manner, and never asked me to sit down, nor would suffer me to put in a Word, till Miss, rising, brought me a Chair, and desiring me to repose myself. This Action, and the Sight of her Charms, quite transported me ; so that I remained some Moments silently gazing upon her, which made her blush : At length I began to talk to her Father, in so mild and persuasive a Strain, that I overcame his brutal, savage Temper ; and he promised me the Man should be released, and he would forgive him. This was a great Matter ; but I still wanted to stay longer, and com-
mended

mended the Situation of his House, or, rather, Castle, in such an insinuating Manner, that he bid his Daughter shew me the Gardens, and every Thing else that was worth seeing, which she readily obeyed him in. Indeed, this Creature had bestowed all that Art could yield on this delightful Spot ; for so it appeared when I got into it ; and, if regular Parterres, falling Cascades, cooling Grottoes, and embowering Shades, could render a Garden agreeable, all these might be found here. I walked with this lovely Maid, with so much Disorder in my Heart and Countenance, that she easily perceived, and gently told me, she feared I was tired. I told her I could never be tired with such Company, as that I was blessed with ; but, if she pleased, would repose a little in the Alcove, at the End of the Alley we were in, if she would not forsake me : She, smiling, said, She would accompany me ; and we entered, and seated ourselves. Happy Situation ! a murmuring Rill ran at the Foot of the little Eminence this Box stood upon, which, in tinkling Falls, meandered amongst the shining Pebbles ; the Jessamine and the Woodbine, interwove their gentle Tendrils with each other, as they ascended the Alcove. The Music that was poured from the Throats of the feathered Songsters in the neighbouring Groves, interrupted now, and now swelled by the fanning Breeze, that brushed the quivering Leaves, joined the amorous Cadence of a spouting Triton, that, from his full blown Cheeks, emptied his watery Treasures into a Reservoir, in full View of our Retirement ; and the Goddesses of these rural Scenes sat beside me, arrayed with more resplendent Graces than decks the rising Morn, or streaks the Western Skies, at the Retreat of the enlivening God of Day ! Fir'd
with

with the present Ocasion, I ventured to tell her, that, though now the happiest of Mortals, I should soon experience a sad Reverse, if she would not permit me to breathe my Passion, a Passion that took Birth when first I saw her! and would continue to the latest Hour of my Life: She blushed, but at length confessed she had conceived some favourable Sentiments of me; and that, would her Father consent, my Visits would not be disagreeable. Oh! my Friend, you who have known the Warmth of a Lover, may easily conceive how I received this generous Declaration! My Acknowledgments were unbounded, and I acted like one transported. We retired into the House, and her Father chid her for staying so long; but I behaved in a Manner agreeable to his Humour; and he went so far, as to give me a general Invitation, to smoke a Pipe with him, that was his Phrase, whenever it suited my Convenience. Sir *Thomas* was surprized, at my Return, when I gave him an Account of my Success; and more so, when the Return of his Tenant convinced him, that what I said was true. He congratulated me; but told me, he was sure *Maloney* would never give his Consent to my having his Daughter, as he was a bigotted *Roman Catholic*, and intended her for a Nephew he had in *Ruth's* Regiment of the *Irish Brigades*, in the *French* Service, whom he had invited over to possess his Daughter, and Heir his Estate. This was very discouraging News; but I was resolved to pursue the Dictates of my Passion; and we took Care to keep our Correspondence so secret, that I had free Access to *Maloney's* House; and he never suspected the Inducements for my frequent Visits. I will not keep you too long by the Rehearsal of the happy Moments I enjoyed at this Time, and the Progress I made in my *Jenny's* Affection;

fection; but it may suffice, that in six Months Time, I had her Liberty to demand her in Marriage of her Father; and employed Sir *Thomas Bourk* to get his Consent; but no Rage could equal his, when the Proposal was made to him; he ran out into the most scandalous and mean Invectives; and, in Conclusion, rudely bid that Gentleman depart his House, for he'd take Care his Daughter should never have it in her Power to marry a Bastard. You may be sure this Usage of my Friend and me shocked me greatly, and at first, I was resolved to call him to a proper Account; but my Love overcame all, and I now pondered on every Method I could devise to speak to the Inflater of my Soul, which, at length, I effected, by getting over the Garden Wall in Disguise, and brought her to consent to make her Escape in a few Days, and marry me, without her Tyrant's Consent. I was rather induced to this Precipitancy, as every Day Col. *Maloney* was expected in *Ireland*, and I was fearful she would not be Proof against the Hardships that would be inflicted upon her, if she did not consent to have him; and it was the easier to attempt an Escape now, because her Father had not discovered she had any Regard for me more than ordinary, and therefore still allowed her the Liberty of going at large about the House and Gardens; for Sir *Thomas*, by my Desire, had concealed the Inclination she had for me, for Fear of subjecting her to his brutal Fury; so that it seemed only a simple Proposal made from me, without other Inducement than the Hopes of having a good Fortune.

We agreed that I should wait at the Place assigned with two or three trusty Friends, and a Ladder of Ropes, by which she might get over the Wall; and then we were to proceed to *Dublin*, to be married, and to leave our Reconciliation with
her

her Father, to Time, which might operate in our Favour.

The second Night after this Agreement, I engaged three of the neighbouring young Gentlemen to assist me; and providing Horses and Fire-arms, we set out for the Expedition. It was very dark, but I found my delightful Creature punctually attending at her Station, and, with Ease conducted her over the Wall, and mounted her; and, my Friends getting on Horse-back, I was preparing to do the same, when I was challenged in an hoarse Voice, with, What are you about there, you Dog? Have you been robbing Mr. *Maloney*? I had not Time to reply, for, at the same Instant, I received a Blow over the Head, that made me stagger; on which I let go the Reins of my Horse, and facing about, drew my Sword, my Antagonist, whom I could just see, doing the same, and at it we went; but I was so fortunate, that, in three or four Passes, I run him through the Body, and he fell; and, at the same Time, I was assaulted by another Hand, who cried out, that I had killed his poor Master, in the *French* Language. One of my Friends, who had dismounted, soon gave the same Account of him, that I had done of the other; and then we bestrode our Horses again, and, encouraging poor Miss *Jenny*, who had fainted at the Danger I was in, we made the best of our Way, and, in three Days, arrived without any remarkable Accident, at *Dublin*, where I was soon put into Possession of all my Soul desired. Sir *Thomas* had declined making one of us, as it was more prudent for him to stay on the Spot, where he was more likely to be of Service to us, than where we were; and you may be sure I was quite surprized, when acquainted, by Letter from him, that *Maloney* was
searching

searching the whole Country for me and his Daughter, with Vows of a bitter Revenge ; and that the two Men whose Rashness had occasioned their Deaths, were his Nephew, and his *Valet de Chambre*, who were just arrived, when our getting over the Wall put them upon seeing what we were about, which proved so fatal to them. There was now no Time to be lost, and, concealing ourselves as well as we could, we applied to our Friends in Power ; and having obtained a Promise of a Pardon from the *Lord Lieutenant*, if necessary, leaving my Wife at *Dublin*, we went, and took our Trials at the Assizes ; and the Jury, tho' greatly influenced by *Maloney*, brought in their Verdict, *Chance Medley*, and we were acquitted of the Murders. That Wretch put all Methods in Practice, and used all his Friends and Money to get a Verdict against us ; but the Affair was so clear, that he was quite baulked in his villainous Designs ; tho' I was obliged however, to send for his Daughter from *Dublin* into Court, he having preferred a second Bill of Indictment against me, for stealing an Heiress, which ended as much to his Dissatisfaction, as the former, by her generous Testimony in my Favour. The whole County rejoiced at his Chagrin, which added so to his Resentment, that he hired Ruffians to destroy me ; which having discovered, and finding no other Way to put an End to such Practices, I indicted him in my Turn, and he received a Sentence agreeable to his Crime ; but his Emissaries on Account of being his Tenants, and threatened, to force them to undertake the Job, with all his Resentment, in Case they did not undertake it, were acquitted.

Finding it in vain to attempt to bring him to Reason, I sat down contentedly ; and having an
Estate

Estate of my own in the Country, went to live upon it, and enjoyed all the Pleasures in my Union with my endearing Wife, that my fondest Expectations had flattered me with ; and I believe no Couple in the Universe could live more happily in themselves, or more beloved by others Here, poor *Saris* wept, and made the bitterest Reflections and uttered such moving Complaints, that I could scarcely calm ; —alas ! he said,

*It is the Curse of virtuous Minds oppress'd
To think what their State is and what it should be :
Impatient of their Lot, they reason fiercely,
And call the Laws of Providence unequal.*

When I had brought him to some Temper, he resumed his Narration in the following Manner : My Spouse at the End of a Twelvemonth brought me a Son, who, I hope, is now living and will meet with an happier Fate than his poor Father ; and in all that Time, tho' we used all the Arts we could employ for that Purpose, the Brute, her Father, would neither see us, nor speak to us, tho' our Coaches often met in the same Road ; and he consoled himself for the Loss of my Wife, by taking an House-keeper, who was a shocking, red-haired Creature, and made him believe she had a Child by him some Years before, which he now took extraordinary Care of, on Purpose to spite me. After the Birth of my Son, I was resolved to have Justice done to my Wife, in an Affair which I had, till that Time suffered to lie dormant : A Brother of her Mother had left her, by his Will, some Years before 8000 *l.* in the Hands of her Father, who was his Executor in Trust for the Use of his Daughter, I sent a proper Person to demand Payment of it which, as I knew he would, he peremptorily refused,

fused, telling the Gentleman in his Way, that we were Villains and Beggars besides, he had more Money to spend in Law than I had, which he would rather do than we should be Sixpence the better for him. Upon this I brought my Action against him, and carried the Affair on, till on various Pretences he removed it to another Court; and in fine, I filed a Bill in *Chancery* against him, and went so far, that, after spending near Two thousand Pounds on each Side, I was sure of a Decree in my Favour the following Term, the Lord *Chancellor* having expressed the utmost Detestation of his Proceedings; and now, this Devil, for I can give him no gentler Term, made Overtures of Peace, and employed Emissaries, who expressed his Sorrow at our Differences, and told us it was his Desire all Animosities should be buried, and he would appoint a Day when we should wait upon him, to eat a reconciling Dinner at his House! Good God! to what Lengths some Men can carry their Wickedness! Upon my Wife and Son's Account, I closed with the Proposal, and appointed my Friend Sir *Thomas* to be one of our Company, little suspecting any Treachery. The Day came, and I carried my Wife and Son with us, and we were received by him, with all the dissembled Fondness the Execution of his black Design required. We spent our Time very agreeably, he kissed and embraced us, and made my Wife a Present of some of her Mother's Jewels, and after Dinner, we had several Bottles of Wine to drink Success to our Accord, and agreed to put a Stop to all Law Proceedings on both Sides. The House-keeper, which I could scarcely relish, made one of the Company; but, all on a sudden my Wife complained she was sick, and both myself and Sir *Thomas* found ourselves very queer and qualmish: She

She grew worse and worse, and turned black in the Face, and before Help could arrive expired in my Arms. Dreadful Moment ! Whilst I was lamenting loudly this cruel Disaster, I heard the House-keeper whisper him softly,—You see, Sir, it did take at last ; these Words roused me from my deplorable Situation, and my Head beginning to turn round, I seized her by the Shoulders and drawing my Sword, asked her sternly, What she was telling her Master ? She turned pale as Death, and was going to reply, when a Servant breaking in, fell on his Knees, and told us, he was sure his young Lady and all of us were poisoned ; that he had brought some Stuff to kill Vermin for his Master the Day before, and was sure it had been applied to that Purpose. Good God ! what a Scene was here, my dear Wife dead before me, Sir *Thomas* just fainting, myself hardly able to stand, and the Wretches, who had brought this Ruin upon me, in Horror and Amaze at being discovered. What could I do, my Friend ? What would you have done ? Rage dried up my Tears, and choaked the Passage of my Words ; and oh, Heaven ! I seized my Wretch of a Father, and ran my Sword up to the Hilt in his Breast, and leaving him to vomit out his black Soul, I executed the same Vengeance on his Whore ; and then losing all Strength, fell lifeless upon the Body of my dearest *Jenny* ! The Surgeon and Physician we had sent for, when I first perceived my Wife ill, soon after arrived, and were shocked at the mournful Scene ; but finding some Signs of Life in me and Sir *Thomas*, and hearing the Report of the Family, that we were poisoned, ordered us to Bed, and administered proper Antidotes, by which we expelled a great Quantity of it, and came to ourselves ; but sufficiently weakened, and, tho' the Strength of our Constitution overcame the Shock

Nature had received, yet a violent Fever succeeded from the Disorder of my Mind, which kept me in this accursed House near six Weeks, during which Sir *Thomas* kindly took Care of my Child and Family, and had the proper Dispositions made before the Coroner, which prevented a good deal of Trouble to us. My Wife's Death lay heavy at my Heart, and I was near six Months in which I never shewed any Signs of Reason. Sir *Thomas* had removed her soon after his Recovery, and caused her to be buried with proper Ceremony, and when I was a little brought to my Senses, I caused a stately Monument to be erected over her, with a proper Inscription to her Memory, which however, has far a better Record in my Breast, from whence the lovely Image shall never depart. His Grievs were so renewed at this Part of his disastrous History, that he fainted, and it was a long Time before I brought him to himself, and was concerned my silly Curiosity has called to Mind his cruel Sorrows. I begged him to finish here, and say no more ; but wiping his Tears away, which trickled fast from his Eyes, he continued as follows : Had it not been for the Consideration of my Infant Son, I had certainly done some desperate Mischief on myself ; but Argument and Reason made me soon more temperate ; I resolved however to forsake a Country that had been the Stage of so many cruel Accidents to me, and settling my Affairs, which were now larger than ever, by the Accession of the Monster's Estate, who had so barbarously killed my Comforts for ever, I appointed Sir *Thomas* Guardian to my Son, giving proper Instructions for his Education and, taking 2000*l.* with me, resolved in some distant Clime to end my Days. Fortune, at *Londan*, directed me to a Friend, who proposed a Voyage to the *East Indies* to me, which I
closed

closed with, and arrived here about half a Year before you. I understand by Letters I have lately received from *Ireland*, that my Son is well ; and have so many pressing Instances to return Home, that I believe I must once more visit this Image of the Woman I loved, and suffer Grief to lay me there by her Side. My Trafficking here has been merely by Way of Amusement, and with no Desire to amass Money. Alas ! those Times are over with me ! and now I have given you my dreadful Story, you will not wonder at my Melancholy, or that I think of nothing but Death, which I hope will speedily end my wretched and painful Being.

C H A P. LI.

He receives Leave to return to England.—Some Strictures on Government.—Finds Mr. Saris at Liberty to go also.—They send Truman away with the greatest Part of their Effects.—Take Leave of their Friends.—Arrive at Batavia.—Embark in a Dutch East-India Ship for Europe.—Touch at the Cape of Good-Hope.

IT was far more than twelve Months before I heard from Mr. *Goodwill*, and the rest of my Friends ; and I returned sincere Thanks to God, that during all this Time, no Mortality had happened amongst us. Mr. *Goodwill* sent me the Order I desired, which his Uncle had obtained by his Interest, and bore Date at the Time that Letter was wrote : It permitted me to leave the Country, and my Factory, in six Months after the Receipt of it. I waited upon Governor—with this Leave, who received me in the politest Manner ; for he had shewn me extraordinary Respect ever since

I arrived, which had been repaid by me in an Observation of that due Deference and Obedience that I think should be always paid to our Superiors. There are, no doubt, a Set of Persons in Being, who are constantly uneasy under whoever governs. Man born a free Agent, naturally aims at reaping all the Privileges that are his happy Lot; but he carries this sometimes too far, he enters into a Comparison between himself and the Person who rules him; he erroneously imagines, that that Person should have greater Talents and Abilities than fall to the Share of such finite Beings; he sees him subject to the same Frailties with himself, and he blames the Power who could not better distinguish than to appoint such a Governor to rule over him. My Friends, the most divine and heavenly Man that ever existed, that true Judge of human Nature, to whom we were obliged for all those sublime Rules and Precepts that under various Forms govern the civilized Part of the World, never entered into the Merits of a Ruler's Character of its Demerits: He, even supposes, or seems to suppose that *Providence* has a great Sway in setting up Magistrates, when, in Answer to the *Jews* ensnaring Question, without calling *Cæsar* an Usurper and a Tyrant, as he really was, he says, *Give unto Cæsar the Things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the Things that are God's!* Certainly in the wise Disposition Heaven makes of Things, it destines one Man to this Employment, and another Man to a different one; it also appoints those that shall govern, and those that shall obey; and their Obligations to each other, being mutual, if the heavenly Contract is broke thro' by either Party, it becomes void of no Effect, and such Remedies ought to be applied to, as are thought proper by either Side of the Question; so far as they do not affect the
general

general Laws of Nature, and the Rules or Conduct of Providence. It is enough, my gentle Reader, that thy Property is secured, and thy Person free from Danger; leave the minute Springs and Movements of Government to Statesmen; believe they do right, and never by an exploring Inquisitiveness into the Actions of your Superiors in their public Station, or in the Management of their private Concerns, endanger that Hurt to your Minds, that Discontent and ill Humour produces. The Governor, undoubtedly, is obliged to consult the Good of the Governed, and no Obligation lies upon us tamely to submit to Oppression, and the Injuries flowing from a bad Administration, to, let me say, its Constituents. But we must not magnify our Wrongs, or encrease our Sorrows, by seeing thro' a false and deceitful Medium. Here we are happy——George reigns in the Hearts, as he does over the Persons of his Subjects, with a mild, a gentle Sway.—Does he appoint Ministers? He appoints such, we must hope as from a thorough Knowledge he thinks equal to the Task of advising and directing him to pursue his People's Good and Happiness; like small Streams derived from this Source, all our petty Magistrates have their Original, and let us endeavour rather to cover than to declare their Faults, if they produce no other bad Consequences than what flows to themselves, by the Contempt and imprudent Management of their private Concerns will occasion. Every Department of Government does not furnish an *Hallifax* or a *Montague*; a *Montague*, alas! lately departed, too soon lost to the bewailing World.—Oh, *Montague*! as long as Virtue is respected by Mankind, as long as Desert is esteemed by the Good; so long as Trade flourishes

in this maritime Country ; as long as true and genuine Benevolence of Heart shall conduce to the Relief of the Miserable ; so long shall thy Loss be lamented by all that ever heard thy Nature and Character ! Thy ducal Coronet borrowed Lustre from thee ; and thy high Rank and Birth only served to make thy noble Mind more conspicuously apparent ! I see, methinks, the god-like Peer, with that Humanity of Countenance so remarkably his, bending in silent Attention to some Tale of Woe, and reaching out the ready Hand to relieve Distress : his Heart melting in soft Sympathy and gentle Compassion, hardly restraining the Tears that stand in his pitying Eyes ! But I can enlarge no more, tho' I long to do it on this engaging Subject, which has carried me so far out of my Road, and brought to my Remembrance one of the greatest Men that ever existed.

I was in some Pain about poor *Saris*, as I did not thoroughly know how he stood in Regard to the Company, and whether he could also leave *Fort St. George*, as soon as I did, which was what I earnestly desired ; but when I mentioned my Thoughts to him, he told me, he was at Liberty to depart whenever he would ; which Leave he had obtained of his Friend in the same Manner I had procured it by mine, and that he would go to *England* when I departed, for the Benefit of my Company ; I returned him Thanks, and we immediately began to get Matters in Order, and to finish our various Concerns, particularly, that of settling our Accompts for the Company with the Governor, which we did with Tokens of his Approbation for our Fidelity. When *Truman* found we were disposing Matters for our Departure he jumped and skipped about as if he was distracted, and was not so much Master of himself for a long
Time,

Time, as to govern his Transports with any Degree of Moderation. When he came a little to himself, he advised us to go to *Batavia*, and from thence in a *Dutch Ship* to *Europe*; War being declared, according to our Accounts, between the *English* and *French*, tho' as yet no Hostilities had been commenced in the *Indian Seas*. I tell you what, *Truman*, says Mr. *Saris*, with Mr. *Thompson's* Consent we'll send thee off for *England* with our best Effects, in the Homeward bound *Dutch Fleet*, and you shall leave us next Week, and go to *Batavia* for that Purpose; and we'll take the Chance of any single Ship that may sail from thence at the six Months end. *Truman* was at first averse to this Proposal, his Affection for me not permitting him to think of parting with me; but upon our joint Desire he undertook, tho' reluctantly, to prepare for his Departure; and, in about a Month, having furnished him properly, we sent him, in a small Vessel to *Batavia*, whence the same Vessel brought Letters from him, that he had embarked, and sailed, in good Health, for the *Cape of Good Hope*. I retained my large Diamond, and a small Charge of Money, having consigned all the rest of my Effects, jointly, to my Father, Mr. *Diaper*, and *Truman*, till I arrived. *Truman* affected me greatly, when we parted, and, in a respectful Manner, clasping me in his Arms, begged me to take Care of myself; and prayed to God to preserve me safe in my designed Voyage: In short, we both shed Tears, and paid that Tribute with Pleasure, to so faithful, so just, and so disinterested a Man, who had secured himself a large Share of my Love and Esteem. We implored the Blessing of God upon his Voyage, and hoped he'd arrive safe, at the destined Port. No Man, that has not experienced the Pleasure of having a faithful Agent and Servant

can express the Relief it gives to the Cares of Life ; and the Secret to procure that Satisfaction, is to convince the Servant, you have his Welfare and Interest at Heart ; and then 'tis natural for him to consult yours, as his own Well-being depends upon it. The lowest People may be brought to esteem and practice noble Principles ; and will, of Course, follow them, if no absurd, or bad Management, in those above them, directs them to different Courses. Would we have honest and true Domesticks about us, we must act in such a Manner ourselves, as to appear amiable in their Eyes ; which will make them fearful of following other Maxims themselves. When the Time of our Departure came, we took an Adieu of all our good Friend, and were entertained agreeably by all the Gentlemen of the Town, who shewed great Concern in parting with ; and the Governor, and our Brother Factors, particularly vied with each other, in making us Presents of such Things as would, they thought, render our Voyage agreeable. As we had no Fleet, or single Ship, going to *Europe*, we determined to go the same Way that we sent *Truman*, and arrived safely in the City of *Batavia*, where we had immediately an Opportunity of a Passage to *Holland*, in the *Yfrow Christiana*, commanded by Capt. *Vander Speigel*, which was a remarkable stout Ship, and well manned, mounting 40 Guns, and carrying 170 Seamen. Having obtained Governor *Van Bluck's* Licence, which we did with some Difficulty, to go in her, I had our Effects registered, we embarked, and stood out to Sea. Before we passed the Line, we lost our Captain, who was one of the most sottish and brutish Fellows in the World, and was actually set on Fire by drinking spirituous Liquors, which at length, burnt out his Entrails, and carried him off. He

was

was succeeded by a very Gentleman-like Man, Capt. *Beckman* ; and, as if the Existence of this Fellow had retarded, or been the *Remora* of our Progress, the Wind, which had been, till now, unfavourable, shifted about, and carried us, at a fine Rate, 'till we fell in with the *Cape*, where we came to Anchor, along-side of two *Dutch* and three *English*, *East-India* Men, after paying the proper Salutes to the Forts and Ships, and receiving the suitable Returns to our Compliments.

C H A P. LII.

His agreeable Surprise in meeting, unexpectedly, a dear and valuable Friend.—They relate to each other their Adventures.—Mr. Diaper's Account of an unhappy Shipwreck and Escape.—The Ships sail in Concert.—Are separated by a violent Storm.

WHEN we had come to Anchor, Mr. *Saris* and myself went with the Captain, and some other Gentlemen, for Shore in our Long-Boat ; and, as we past along Side of a large *English* Ship, we enquired her Name, and my Heart jumped from my Bosom almost, when we were answered, as to that Particular, and that she was commanded by Captain *Friendly*. This revived a thousand endeared Ideas in my Mind, and I begged the Captain to call on Board her, which we did ; and, the Minute I set my Foot on Deck, I enquired, precipitately, Whether Mr. *Diaper* was on Board ? I was answered by the Captain, that I was very lucky, if I wanted to see that Gentleman, as he was *Supercargo* on Board the next Ship ; to which he would do

himself the Pleasure to accompany me, as he had not himself seen that valuable Man a great while, his Voyage having been altered, when he left *England*. When we came there, as I was getting up the Ship's Side, I overheard my Friend's Voice talking to somebody, and purposely covered my Face with my Hat to surprize him with the unexpected Sight I was going to present before him. We were intreated to go into the great Cabbin, where we seated ourselves, and soon after Mr. *Diaper* entered and saluted us ; he was so altered, that had it not been for his Voice, I should scarcely have distinguished him, and for that sympathetic involuntary Recognition my Heart afforded me. I was as much altered myself, but the Moment he heard me speak, he turned his Eyes eagerly towards me, without saying one Word ; his Knees tottered under him, and he exclaimed, Great God ! I thank thee for this ! and would have dropped down, had I not ran to him, and clasping him in my Arms could not refrain from Tears : Heavens ! I cried, this is Bliss,—unutterable, — inexpressible,—and pays me for all my Fatigues.—To meet thee thus, he rejoined—who could expect it ? And thus for near a Quarter of an Hour, we did not nothing but embrace, and utter such disjointed Speeches, as our sudden Elevation of Mind could only dictate. Has my Reader known what it is to feel the Warmth of Friendship's sublime and inspiring Sentiments, that Flow of Joy that rushes o'er the Soul, in obliging and being obliged by disinterested Virtue ? Has he been long absent from the amiable Partner of his Bosom ? Has he found at her Return constant, true and faithful, and equal to all his longing Wishes ? Then he may have felt those Gusts and Starts of passionate Fondness, that we felt in seeing each other after a seven Years Absence, and all the Uncertainties it had produced in our Minds
of

of each other's Welfare ; *that Flood of Joy*, that *wild tumultous Roll*, that cast-aside *Body*, and left nothing about us but *Mind*, and wondering, gazing Sight. When we became somewhat calmer, still our Enquiries of each other made our Conversation a disjointed Medley, in asking Questions on each Side, without being Master enough of ourselves to resolve them. At length I presented Mr. *Saris* to him as a valuable Friend who had been ever since we met, highly participating in our mutual Satisfaction ; and, being obliged to yield to Captain *Beckman's* Desires to go on Shore as soon as possible, Mr. *Diaper* obtained Leave of his Captain to accompany us ; for tho' the *Supercargoes* are superior to the Commanders of *India* Ships, when on Shore at the Factories, they are under the Captain's Direction in the Voyage ; when we came on Shore, after again refreshing ourselves whilst the Captain was employed in his Business ; Mr. *Diaper*, Mr. *Saris*, and myself, took a Walk in one of the beautiful Gardens of the *Dutch* Company, which bloom with all Nature's various Productions, and, sitting down under the shady Covering of a delightful Alcove, I related all my Adventures and Successes to my Friend ; and he in Return gratified me with an Account of all that had happened to himself since our Separation, by which I understood, to my great Joy, that he never again proposed going to *India*, having acquired a Fortune of near 30,000 *l.* thro' various Difficulties and Dangers, with Honour to himself and Satisfaction to his Owners. He now hoped with me we should find all our Friends well, and particularly his adorable *Bellair*, whom he was hastening to espouse. I found, in his last Voyage with Captain *Friendly*, he had been shipwrecked, and underwent

derwent great Difficulties on a barbarous Coast, whereby he had been a great Loser ; and that Adventure being very curious and extraordinary, I shall particularly insert it, as he related it.

*The unfortunate Shipwreck and lucky Escape of
Mr. DIAPER.*

WE had a Succession of foul Weather, from the very Day we left the *Cape of Good Hope*, which continued with little Intermission till we came the length of the *Philippine Islands*; from which by our Reckonings, we had been driven a great Way to the Eastward, when another violent Storm arose from the *S. E.* and for near three Weeks we were the Sport of the Winds and Waves, and could keep no regular Account of our Way. Our People had been so reduced by Sickness before, that we had not Hands sufficient to manage the Ship, so that the *Supercargoes*, and other Gentlemen, were obliged to exert themselves in performing the meanest as well as the most toilsome Offices. Our Provisions fell so scarce, that we were at very short Allowance ; and for Water we had not above half a Pint a Day *per Man*, and we had been obliged to throw our Guns and the less valuable Part of our Cargo over-board. Nothing could be more dreadful and pitiable than our melancholy Situation ; so that we began to abandon ourselves to Despair, and wearied with Sickness and Fatigue, resigned ourselves in Expectation of the fatal Moment that should put a Period to our Misfortunes. I took a Spell one Evening at the Helm, and experienced a great Instance of the Protection of Providence ; an encreased Gust of Wind threw a Sea over us, that washed me, a Mate, and

and three other Men, that were upon Deck, over-board, and tho' it was almost instantaneous, yet I had Time enough to reflect that I was lost, and to put a few fervent Supplications to God, recommending my Soul into his Hands, who bestowed it upon me ; when another Wave threw me again upon the main Deck, and there left me gasping for Life : It was some Time before I came to myself, and I was then hurried into the Cabbin, and put to Bed by Captain *Friendly*. The Mate and the other three were lost, and with the highest Sentiments of Devotion, I gave Thanks to, and adored that merciful Being who had thus saved me from the Waters that so terribly encompassed me round about. We began soon too experience all the Miseries of Famine, which appeared in its most terrifying Forms. Six of our sick People expired thro' mere Want of necessary Sustenance, and we were all so overcome with Fasting, that the Men began to debate, whether or no Lots should not be cast for one of us to die to preserve the rest : We drank our Urine for many Days, not having the least Rain since the Storm began, which otherwise we should have saved for our Use. Our Main-mast was brought by the Board, but thro' Mercy we got her clear of the Ship, and our Bow-sprit and Part of our Rudder were carried away by the howling Waves. Sure no Sight can be more dreadful than to see a Vessel in such a forlorn Condition, and to survey all around the horrid Waste of Waters breaking Mountains high on every Side, at Distance you see them dissolve into a white Foam now sinking into an abrupt Vale, or rising into a perpetual Succession of broken craggy Hills, rolling far and wide away. The hollowing Burst, that the bellying Winds send forth, rattle thro' the Rigging with impetuous Force, and like one continued

Peal

Peal of Thunder, seem to deafen the Ears and
stun the Brain :

——— *see forked Glare,
The livid Lightning's thro' the vast Expanse,
And, bark ! boarse Thunder growls with dread-
ful Roar ?*

*No more the Helm obeys the Pilot's Hand ;
See, borne aloft, our Masts pervade the Skies,
And now we're bury'd in the Gulph below !*

*Dreadful the shocking Scene ! but grateful still
To Genii, who aspire, tho' still surrounded
By every wretched Ill that starts the Soul,
To purchase Honour, and to serve Mankind !
Let Wretches, mean and sordid, safely lurk,
Bury'd luxuriously, in Holes and Corners ;
Our's is the useful Life, tho' Want and Anguish,
Famine, and all the dreaded Train of Evils,
That human Nature shrinks at, oft conspire
To check our Frailty in the glorious Race !*

At the End of three Weeks, or thereabout, as I was looking out before, methought I saw an Object, that, after observing stedfastly, I found still kept its Position : I set it by the Compass, and perceived it bore off us due South ; so with Joy I called to Captain *Friendly*, who was then very ill, and told him, I was sure I made Land a Head. Tho' he could scarcely crawl, the News gave him such Spirits, that he was up in an Instant ; and every body getting the Scent, the Decks were soon filled with People, whose Looks were capable to strike the Soul with Horror ; all wan, and pale, and ghastly, from Illness and Famine ; their Countenances now betrayed somewhat of a Smile, and the meagre Hands and hollow Eyes were lifted up to thank God for the Mercy he had bestowed upon us. The succeeding Day we had
a short

a short Cessation of the Storm, and the Sky being somewhat clear, we could now perceive it was plainly Land, rising into Hummocks, and descending on each Side into a Point ; we could not imagine what Land it was, but steered directly in for it, imagining it to be about seven Leagues distant from us, when the Wind again began to rise with its wonted Fury and drove us directly in for it : And now a fresh Difficulty arose, how we should prevent the Vessel's driving upon the Rocks, which would be our inevitable Destruction ; however, after tacking about, we found we could not keep her Head up to the Wind, and, weary and faint, let her drive, invoking the great *Pilot of the Universe*, once more to appear and act in our Favour. In short, three or four Hours brought us amongst the Breaker, and presently the Ship thumped hard upon the Rocks, beat Part of her false Keel off, and one of the Garboard-trakes ; so that soon the Water poured upon us on all Sides, and we were obliged to put out our Boats, which were the *Long-Boat* and *Pinnace*, which with less Difficulty we did, as the former had been all Day in the Chains ; and putting in the latter the Company's Silver, and providing ourselves with some Powder, Fire-Arms, and mathematical Instruments, with all our Books and Papers, and some other Materials, we safely got into them to the Number of Forty-five Souls, and committed ourselves to the Protection of Providence, whose Assistance we again experienced by getting safely also on Shore, whilst at a Distance we saw our poor Vessel torn into a thousand Pieces.

Our first Care was to secure our Boats, and whilst a Party set about building Tents for such of our People as were quite sick and unable to help themselves, and whom with Difficulty extreme
we

we had got from the Wreck with us, the Captain, myself and two more went, armed to look abroad into the Country, to see the Place, and to discover if it was inhabited, and if we could procure the Necessaries of Life. The Soil was sandy, and abounded in several Kinds of Trees and Shrubs; particularly to our great Joy, we found the *Palm-tree* to be one of them, which gave us a Prospect of meeting with still greater Abundance. We found some Deer and some wild Hogs, and several other Sorts of Animals for Food, and a particular Kind of Herb somewhat like Spinage, by the Help of which Refreshments, we were soon all well recovered save six, who expired soon after our Landing; and began to enter into a Form of domestic Government, Parties being appointed to kill Game, others to cut Firing, and the Remainder to lengthen our Long-boat, by the Help of which we were in Hopes we might get from this Place. All our Conjectures were a long Time at a Puzzle to know where we were, tho' some of our old Voyagers were positive we were in one of the most Northernly of the *Marian Islands*, which lie from 13° to 22° of Northern Latitude, and in 148° of East Longitude from the Meridian of *London*. Our Observations were confirmed in this, and some of our Men desiring to go out in the Pinnacle to discover we were really upon one of these Islands or no, and to seek for Inhabitants, for as yet we had seen none; ten of them were permitted to go with Mr. *Midgley* a *Supercargo*, and a Mate at their Head; they were victualled as well as we could supply them, and having the proper Instruments, and some Trifles which we had saved to truck with the Natives, they set out on their Voyage; but whether they were buried in the Sea, or destroyed by the *Barbarians*, I can't tell, for we never saw them more;
and

and the Loss of so many of our Comrades struck us with a great Damp, and sunk our Spirits, having now only twenty-seven left ; besides in losing the Pinnacle we received a very great Detriment, as now we could not go out to fish, which made a Part of our Diet. The Island, in the interior Part was like a Garden, and the Air so temperate, that we could not help thinking ourselves as happy as People in our Circumstances could desire to be, considering all Things ; and could we once get to any of our Settlements or Factories, and from thence to *Europe*, as we had done all that Men could do, we did not doubt our Conduct would be approved by the Company, and that they would make no Difficulty of employing us again in the Service. In the Close of the Day we busied ourselves in such Sports or Diversions as we could perform, as Wrestling, Leaping, &c. and I made a Back-gammon Table, in a rude Fashion, and having Dice, that was the Entertainment of the better Sort of us : Every Day I read the Church Service, Morning and Evening, by the Captain's Desire, and on *Sundays* we attended the Devotion of the Day with all the Punctuality and Seriousness imaginable, and set apart that seventh Portion of Time to those Exercises that amend and raise the Heart to the great first Fountain of all created Things. In Appearance there could not be a more harmonious and peaceable Set of People than we all were, expressing great Regard and Affection to each other ; but our melodious *Waller* might well say,

*More Dangers now from Man alone we find,
Than from the Rocks, the Billows, or the Wind.*

And this in a little Time proved exactly to be our unhappy Case. Is it not somewhat surprising, that

that the Spirit of Discord reigns so much amongst Mankind, that it follows them, and intrudes itself into their Breasts, even when their very Being depends upon Unity and Friendship's being preserved amongst them? Could a Situation much more direful be thought of than ours was, separated as it were from all the World, the Companions and Brothers of Misfortune; and of Misfortune not to be overcome, without our joint Efforts employed to extricate us. Yet we fell into Feuds and Dissentions that caused the Death of many, and had very near ruined the Innocent with the Guilty, and involved us all in Destruction. Hitherto every one had shewn the utmost Willingness in the Tasks appointed them, and to obey the Commands of their Officers, to whom they had been as submissive as before our Shipwreck; and by that Means our Long-boat was nearly ready for Sea, was decked and strengthened properly, so as to become an excellent Sea-Boat, and the Rigging her, for which we were particularly obliged to the *Palm-tree*, was on the Point of being finished; when a most horrid Conspiracy was discovered, carried on by twelve of our best Hands, who had entered into an Agreement to take away the Company's Treasure, and make their Escape in the Vessel, and, leaving us in this disconsolate Condition, go to some of the *Portuguese* Settlements, share the Money, and every one to shift for himself. This was their first Plan, but they afterwards altered it, and agreed to run amongst the *Philippine Islands*, or to steer to the *Streights of Manilla*, and there to endeavour to seize some large Vessel, and go upon the *Account*, or turn *Pyrates*. The principal Conspirator was one *Scott*, the *Boatswain*, a Fellow that on Board, I had observed to be of a mutinous, domineering Spirit, and particularly

larly severe in the Execution of his Office; in short, I never liked him, but had seen him behave with great Caution and Circumspection since he had been on Shore, which had in a Manner cured both Captain *Friendly* and myself of our Prejudices against him. They were all armed with Firelocks and Hangers, as well as ourselves, which made it the more dangerous; and their Design was just ripe for Execution, when I was the happy Instrument to discover and defeat it. I was one Day out with my Gun, and a favourite Dog of mine, who had been before to *India* with me; and having tired myself in the Pursuit of Game, laid myself down in a Copse, intending to take a Nap before I returned to my Companions, whilst the Dog strayed at some Distance from me, round about employed in the seeking Way of *Pointers*. I overheard a Voice which I knew to be *Scott's*, who hallooed to another Man, Damn me, how came this Dog here? He's like his Master, always peering and prying about, and be damned to him; I wish I could as easily dispatch him, as I could his Dog, and then we should have nothing to fear; but I'll be damned if I don't hide the precise Son of a Bitch, some how or other, notwithstanding: Upon which he gave my Dog a Kick, who run yelping away, and as it happened, distant from the Place I lay in, at the Back of which these Fellows were walking. Curse me, replies another, whom I knew to be *Will Jones*, the *Carpenter's Mate*, he's a good Fellow too for that Matter; I would not have any Blood spilt if it could be helped, but as to the Company, a Pack of rich Scoundrels, I think it no Sin to rob them, if it was of twice as much. I lay close all this While, and heard them talk over their
whose

whole Design, and luckily left the Spot, without its being perceived that I had overheard them; and, in the Course of their Talk, learned all the Names of the Gang. I was shocked and amazed at such a Scene of Villainy, but resolved to act very cautiously, as I perceived they were already very strong. The next Day I took Captain *Friendly* out with me, and Mr. *Benson* one of our Mates, and the only one we had remaining, under Pretence of shewing them a fine Prospect which I had discovered in my Peregrinations the Day before. When we had got far enough, I began to open what I had heard, and my important Discovery, which made them tremble; and tho' they both were as courageous Men as any I ever knew, yet it was some Time before their Amazement would suffer them to speak a Syllable; at length, when their first Surprize was over, we began to consult Ways and Means to crush the Conspiracy before it came to a greater Head; and, in order to that, it was thought necessary, that the Silver should be put under a Guard of two of our trustiest Men, to be relieved every four Hours, and that I should lie in the Hut where it was secured, that the Captain should call all the Hands together the next Day; and endeavour to seize the Conspirators unarmed, by the Help of such of our People as still continued faithful, and to whom we were to impart the Heads of the Affair this very Evening. Accordingly, we sent privately to them, one by one, to avoid Suspicion, and received a Promise from all of them, that they would stand by their Commander, and not see the Company injured; and most of them were so irritated, we could hardly restrain their Rage within proper Bounds; but what gave us great Uneasiness, was the

the Impossibility of securing their Arms, or catching them without them; for, from a Precaution generally attendant upon the Actions of designing and bad People, who are full of Suspicions, and ever on their Guard, they, it was observed of late, always went armed, and as we were told, which was what had surprized the Rest of the Men, even lay with their Musquets by them all Night. It was then thought proper to alter our Plan of Action; and the first Time three or four of them went out together, to fish or hunt, to surround them, and, by Force of Arms, make them Prisoners; and, thus weakened in their Numbers, to attack the Rest, and, not surrendering, to put them to the Sword. An Opportunity immediately occurred; and *Scott*, with four more, going out, towards the other End of the Island, with Pretence to hunt, but really to agree on Methods to put their Scheme in Execution, I begged the Captain to permit me to follow him, with seven picked Men; which accordingly he did, and I took a different Rout, knowing, however, it would soon bring us to encounter each other. In about an Hour we heard them approach, at a Distance; upon which I ordered three of my Men to enter a Kind of Thicket, where they might be concealed from their first Sight, whilst I advanced, with the Rest, some Paces, and soon perceived my Gentlemen, who made a Stand, and asked, in a familiar Way, how we came out so far? I drew them, by Degrees, to the Place of my Ambuscade, talking of indifferent Matters; and then, facing about suddenly, cried, Gentlemen, I command you to lay down your Arms, and surrender yourselves Prisoners, that you may be cleared of a black Design against the Lives of your Companions, and to run away with the Vessel,

fel, that we have all contributed to build to carry us from this solitary Place ; or may receive the Punishment due to to your Crime. *Scott*, with the rest, turned pale, to hear me speak thus : But being a bold and desperate Sett of Wretches, they soon resumed their Countenances, and he told me, he did not know by what Authority I called them to Account ; that they were not under my Command, nor any one else ; and would try who were the best Men, if I persisted in my Design ; so, d—n ye, my Lads, let's charge 'em directly ; on which he fired at me, and, thereupon, I ordered my Men in the Thicket to let fly, by which two of the Conspirators were killed, who, at the same Instant, with an unlucky Shot, dispatched one of my Companions ; however, like wild Beasts, they did not take Warning, by their Friends Fate, which only served to redouble their Fury ; and *Scott* advancing before the other two to knock me down with the Butt-end of his Piece, I clapped my Firelock to his Breast, and shot him dead upon the Spot ; on which his Companions surrendered themselves Prisoners at Discretion, and we bound their Hands and drove them before us till we came near Home ; when, leaving them with two Men, for their Safe-keeping, the rest of us entered our little Plantation, where Captain *Friendly* was under dreadful Apprehensions, fearing our Plot had miscarried ; but now, when, from the Information of my Prisoners, I could give them an exact Account of the Number and Designs of these Wretches, he was made tolerable easy, and we prepared for the Execution of the second Part of our Scheme. The Captain, and Mr. *Benson*, each attended by six Men, well armed, advanced before their Hut, and summoned them to surrender, or expect to be
be

be treated without Mercy, as *Scott* and the rest of their Companions had been before ; but crying out, *One and all, One and all*, they sallied out, and Desperado like, fired their Pieces on both Parties, by which we lost two Men ; and, by our Return to their Fire, dropped two of theirs. By this Time they had retreated to a large Tree, which had been cut down Some Time before, of which they made a kind of Breast-work ; and, before our People could close with them, had loaded again, and discharged full in their Teeth, by which another Man was killed, and Captain *Friendly* wounded in the Shoulder ; but, in Return to the Salute, our Parties fired, and laid three more of them flat on the Earth ; and the remaining two flung down their Arms, and submitted. As so much Blood had been spilt, and these four Fellows were the least guilty amongst them, Capt. *Friendly* deferred any Proceedings against them, and proposed to keep them confined till we sailed, in order to deliver them up to the first Factory we came to, for the Company to dispose of as they thought fit ; but, whilst we were busied in quelling the Insurrection, five of our Men, who were on Board the *Escape*, for so we had named our new Vessel, agreed to run away with her ; and providing themselves privately, with some Provisions and Water, had put out to Sea, without being perceived by any of us, we were so employed in the aforesaid Operations : And thus, whilst we were contending for the Prize, it was run away with from both Parties. Our Consternation was extreme, when we discovered this Perfidy, and saw at Distance, our Boat under Sail, and ploughing thro' the Waves. We were unable to speak or think, and were involved to the deepest and most cruel Despair, finding now all Hopes to get away fruitless, and of no effect, unless Providence directed some Vessel

fel that Way, which was a Thing we had no Foundation to suppose. We were now only ten of us, including our Prisoners, who seemed so sincerely penitent, that they were suffered to walk Abroad, but were not trusted with Arms. Nothing can equal, sure, our disconsolate Condition ; and we began to think Heaven had forsaken us, and that we must finish our Days thus remote from our Friends, and native Country, and robbed of all our sanguine Desires, and fondest Wishes ; when one calm Morning, to our infinite Joy we descried a Sail, at some Leagues Distance ; upon which we made a great Fire on an Eminence, and getting upon another Hill, pitched a Pole there on, upon which we hung a Shirt, and continued firing our Musquets without Intermission, hoping some Eye or other on Board her would discover these Signals of Distress ; and how rejoiced we were, when we could see a Boat put off, full of Men, who rowed with all their Might towards the Island, and soon came within Hale of us ; when lying on their Oars, they asked us, in *Portuguese*, Who we were ? I answered for the rest, in that Language, That we were the Remains of the Crew of an *English* Ship, who had been shipwrecked here a great while ago ; and begged them, for God's Sake to take us on Board, which they immediately consented to ; but would not touch the Company's Silver, without first obtaining their Captain's Leave. We were overcome with Transport at this Change of our Condition, and returned sincere Thanks to God for our Deliverance, and that we had fallen into the Hands of Friends and Allies to our Nation ; and, indeed, we met with the noblest Usage from the Captain *Don Francisco de Znniga*, who, at my Request, sent his Boat again to Shore for the Treasure, I was so fond of saving for my Owners Benefit. This
Ship

Ship was bound from *Goa*, on a trading Voyage to *China* and *Japan*, and was a very large Vessel, and better manned than most of the *Portuguese* Ships generally are in these Parts of the World ; and the good Captain agreed to put us ashore at *Canton*, which was the first Place he designed to touch at. Nothing could happen better than this ; nor could we be carried to a more desirable Place ; but, tho' we experienced all the Goodness and Generosity imaginable from this noble *Portuguese*, we experienced the utmost Brutality, and superstitious Hatred, from the common Sailors, possible ; and could not help acknowledging, that, in their Ships, they are the most nasty and lazy Wretches, that ever the World produced ; and such bad Seamen, in general, that, in a hard Gale of Wind, they, instead of bestirring themselves with Briskness and Alacrity, are constantly supplicating their St. *Antonio* to do their Business for them ; so that their Commanders are forced to exert their Authority over them, as over a Pack of Slaves, to bring them to any Thing. They are, however, well acquainted with the *East-Indian* Seas, and are good Pilots ; and from them we learnt, that the Island we were upon was called *Assogon* ; which they themselves had been driven to the Sight of also by a Storm, which proved to us so propitious and fortunate. Don *Francisco* was as good as his Word, and set us safely on Shore at *Canton*, refusing to take any Satisfaction for the Service he had done us ; and we once more got amongst our Countrymen, after a Series of such Perils, Misfortunes, and Dangers ; and soon after took Passage in another of the Company's Ships for *England*, where, when we arrived, and had given the Directors an Account of our Behaviour and Hardships, they treated us very

VOL. II. I kindly,

kindly, made us handsome Presents, and gave Capt. *Friendly* a Ship for *Coast and Bay*, and provided me with my present Voyage to my old Station, *Canton*, whence I am arrived here, Homeward-bound, happy in having recovered a Friend I so dearly love, and who has been constantly uppermost in my Thoughts.

We sympathized with each other, in the various Difficulties and Misfortunes we had met with, and congratulated, mutually, one another, on our good Success, which was likely now to raise us to a State of uninterrupted Happiness, if a Mortal can ever be said to participate of it. He heard *Prim's* Adventures with Pleasure and Surprise, and conceived an high Opinion and Regard for Mr. *Saris*. When he talked of his dear *Bel-lair*, he perceived the Tears start in my Eyes; and I could not help making a mournful Comparison between his happy State and my Misery, deprived, for ever, of my adorable and adored *Louisa*. He saw my Pain; and, taking me in his Arms, kindly said all he could to dissipate my Uneasiness, and blamed himself for mentioning a Name which could not fail of reviving my Ideas of the Charmer of my Soul. He would fain have persuaded us to leave the *Dutch* Ship, and go Passengers in his, but he had contracted such a Friendship for Capt. *Beeckman*, and he had done so many Things, kindly to accommodate us in the Voyage, that at length my Friend agreed, it would be almost a Crime to leave him, and especially as their Ship was so full, that he could not promise us near so good Entertainment there. He invited the Captain with us, to a genteel Treat he gave us on Board his Ship; and all the Time we lay at the *Cape*, the Intercourse of Civilities from Ship to Ship was great and noble; and like Men who sincerely delighted to oblige each other. The friendly

ly Behaviour between Mr. *Diaper*, myself and Mr. *Saris*, spread a Complacency every where, and inspired Love and Humanity into every Breast. When we had got all on Board that was necessary for our Voyage, my dear Friend took a tender Farewell of us, hoping we should arrive safe to the desired, the destined Spot, from which we had been so long absent, in these uncomfortable sultry Climates. Captain *Beeckman*, by the Desire of the other Captains, took the Command as *Commodore*, and delivered his Orders accordingly; resolving, if possible, to keep Company with each other to *Europe*. We weighed, and set sail in Concert, and continued so till we came the Length of the *Canaries*, when a violent Storm arose, that put us in the utmost Pain for each other. Our Ship rode it well; but Capt. *Friendly's*, and that wherein my Friend was, seemed to labour very hard, amidst the impetuous Winds, and boiling Waves, which rose even to the Clouds; and, in a Day afterwards, the Storm still continuing, we lost Sight of our whole Fleet, to our great Uneasiness. I sent up Petitions for their Safety, and prayed that the Almighty would still the raging Main, and protect my poor Friend and his Companions. We drove thus for several Days; but at length the Tempest abated, and a still Calm succeeded this War of the Elements.

kindly, made us handsome Presents, and gave Capt. *Friendly* a Ship for *Coast and Bay*, and provided me with my present Voyage to my old Station, *Canton*, whence I am arrived here, Homeward-bound, happy in having recovered a Friend I so dearly love, and who has been constantly uppermost in my Thoughts.

We sympathized with each other, in the various Difficulties and Misfortunes we had met with, and congratulated, mutually, one another, on our good Success, which was likely now to raise us to a State of uninterrupted Happiness, if a Mortal can ever be said to participate of it. He heard *Prim's* Adventures with Pleasure and Surprise, and conceived an high Opinion and Regard for Mr. *Saris*. When he talked of his dear *Bel-lair*, he perceived the Tears start in my Eyes; and I could not help making a mournful Comparison between his happy State and my Misery, deprived, for ever, of my adorable and adored *Louisa*. He saw my Pain; and, taking me in his Arms, kindly said all he could to dissipate my Uneasiness, and blamed himself for mentioning a Name which could not fail of reviving my Ideas of the Charmer of my Soul. He would fain have persuaded us to leave the *Dutch* Ship, and go Passengers in his, but he had contracted such a Friendship for Capt. *Beeckman*, and he had done so many Things, kindly to accommodates us in the Voyage, that at length my Friend agreed, it would be almost a Crime to leave him, and especially as their Ship was so full, that he could not promise us near so good Entertainment there. He invited the Captain with us, to a genteel Treat he gave us on Board his Ship; and all the Time we lay at the *Cape*, the Intercourse of Civilities from Ship to Ship was great and noble; and like Men who sincerely delighted to oblige each other. The friendly

ly Behaviour between Mr. *Diaper*, myself and Mr. *Saris*, spread a Complacency every where, and inspired Love and Humanity into every Breast. When we had got all on Board that was necessary for our Voyage, my dear Friend took a tender Farewell of us, hoping we should arrive safe to the desired, the destined Spot, from which we had been so long absent, in these uncomfortable sultry Climates. Captain *Beeckman*, by the Desire of the other Captains, took the Command as *Commodore*, and delivered his Orders accordingly; resolving, if possible, to keep Company with each other to *Europe*. We weighed, and set sail in Concert, and continued so till we came the Length of the *Canaries*, when a violent Storm arose, that put us in the utmost Pain for each other. Our Ship rode it well; but Capt. *Friendly's*, and that wherein my Friend was, seemed to labour very hard, amidst the impetuous Winds, and boiling Waves, which rose even to the Clouds; and, in a Day afterwards, the Storm still continuing, we lost Sight of our whole Fleet, to our great Uneasiness. I sent up Petitions for their Safety, and prayed that the Almighty would still the raging Main, and protect my poor Friend and his Companions. We drove thus for several Days; but at length the Tempest abated, and a still Calm succeeded this War of the Elements.

C H A P. LIII.

They put into Madeira.——An extraordinary Adventure.——He saves an old Friend from a Gang of Bravoes.——They are wounded in the Conflict.——Their mutual Joy at the Sight of each other.——Mr. Archer's Account of the Accident.——He embarks with Captain Beeckman.——They arrive at Amsterdam.

THE Winds hanging contrary to us, and some of our Men being very ill, our Captain resolved to touch at the *Madeira's*; and accordingly we anchored in the Road of *Fial*; and soon after the Captain, Mr. *Saris*, and myself, went on Shore, and dined at the *Dutch Consul's*, where we were elegantly entertained; and the next Day paid our Compliments to the *English Consul*, who received us with that Politeness so usual to that Gentleman, and staid us to Dinner; and several of the *English Merchants* accompanied us to see the Curiosities of the Island, and those of the Town. I had a particular Veneration for this Place, as it was the Scene of the Adventures of two faithful Lovers, who here finished their Lives and Misfortunes together, after retiring from the Rage of their Persecutors in *England*. The *Romish* Inhabitants abound with all the superstitious Customs and Ceremonies that can make a rational Creature sick of Ignorance and Enthusiasm; and perhaps, in their Manners, are the basest and lowest Wretches that one can form an Idea of. I found the celebrated Wines of this Place not near of so generous a Relish and Flavour, as they were in most distant Parts I had drank them: And 'tis an Observation of the Merchants, that the best *Madeira* is to be found at
New York

New York in *North America*, owing as much to their Management of it there, as to the Accidents of Purgation and Refining which it meets with in the Passage. We spent many agreeable Hours here, and were universally carested; but, to our Disappointment, found only one *Dutch Ship* of all our Convoy, had put into *Fial*; which gave me fresh Pain for poor *Diaper*, who, my melancholy Disposition suggested to me had perished in the Ocean's devouring Jaws.

One Evening I was returning from a Merchant's to the *English Consul's*, having left Mr. *Sarris* and Captain *Beeckman* behind me, and was going to the upper Part of the Town for that Purpose, when my Ears were accosted with the Clashing of Swords, and several heated Expressions uttered in the *Portugueze* Language; and particularly one Voice cried, Villains, tho' oppressed with Numbers, you'll find me no easy Conquest! From a certain generous Propensity in my Nature, I drew my Sword, and hastened to the Succour of this unknown Person, and by the glimmering Twilight, could perceive he was assaulted by six others, who had surrounded him; upon which I cried, in the same Language, Courage, Sir, I believe your Cause is good by the Multitude of your Assailants; Fortune has sent you an Assistant, who perhaps may turn the Scale on your Side; and so saying, I bestirred myself in a Manner that made our Antagonists think it was Time to act with more Caution than they had hitherto done; but Villains are always Cowards, and after giving my Companion a Wound, that laid him on the Ground, and running me thro' the Left-arm, one of them dropping, and the Rest having received several Hurts, they scoured away and left us Masters of the Field

of Battle. By this Time the Garrison had been alarmed, and a strong Party with an Officer at the Head of it, sent to quell any Disorder that might have arisen: They found me raising the unknown Gentleman, who had received several Wounds, and when they had looked in the dead Man's Face, they knew him to be one of those execrable Rascals, that for Hire will undertake to rid a Man of his Enemy, by stabbing or shooting him privately, or attacking him with Numbers; a Practice more common amongst the *Portuguese*, than even with the *Spaniards* and *Italians*; nay, those Fellows pretend to so much Honour in their Way, that if the Employer happens to relent, they surely sacrifice him, if he gives Notice to his Antagonist to avoid the Danger he has planted for him. When the Officer had received my Account of the Affair, he very civilly desired me to attend him to the *Governor*, who was making merry at an *English* Merchant's, who testified so much in my Favour, that we were set at Liberty, and a Proclamation issued to take the Rest of the Persons concerned in this vile Attempt. The Gentleman I had relieved could scarcely walk, but understanding he quartered at Don *Henriques des Guzman's*, the Officer and myself accompanied him there, where we received the Thanks of that Gentleman, and a fine young Lady his Daughter, who both seemed mightily affected with the Misfortune that had happened to their Friend. In the Hurry and Confusion this Affair had put me into, I had not regarded him attentively; but hearing him thank me very gratefully in the *English* Language, methought the Tone and Manner of his Expression revived somewhat in my Memory, that had been very faithfully recorded there; and how pleasingly surprized was I, when, asking the Name of his Preserver,

Preserver, after telling him it was *Thompson*, weak as he was, he gave a transported Cry, and said, Yes, 'tis he! it could be no Body else but him that saved me.—Ah, my dear Friend!—and yet it can't be he,—it must,—it is,—and he has quite forgotten his faithful *Archer*: At that Name, I plainly perceived it to be that young Gentleman I had so dearly valued, and who was so altered, it was impossible for me also to have recollected him. Though now plain, it was still mysterious, and taking him in my Arms, our Congratulations were so affecting and tender, as melted all the Standers-by; in short, we were moved ourselves, and all the little Scenes of boyish Affection, and the Transactions of our juvenile Years, rushed at once into our Minds, and caused an inexpressible Gladness to play about our Hearts. Don *Henriques*, and the Rest of us could hardly persuade him to go to Bed and have his Wounds dressed, which we found were not dangerous; and as to mine, it appeared so slight a Matter, that I would have sat up all Night with my Friend: But that the Surgeon would by no Means permit, for already our Interview had caused a Fever in him, which he was very apprehensive of the Consequences of; so returning Thanks to the Gentleman and his Family, I departed to my Lodging, promising *Archer*, that I would see him betimes in the Morning.

I informed Mr. *Saris* of my good Fortune, in having saved the Life of a Man I so much loved, and whom I had not seen for so many Years. I could perceive Mr. *Archer* was altered very much for the better, and had all the Gentleman about him; together with the Roughness of an *Englishman*, there was mingled the soft Air and Look of the *Portuguese*, which had a very good

Effect upon the Spectator ; but what I valued him much for was to see that he carried the same honest friendly Heart in his Bosom, that he had done when we roved the Fields of Science, under the endearing Care of my Father. I carried Mr. *Saris* with me to see him, and he was so well recovered, that he was able to discourse ; and we renewed again all those Testimonies of Affection so natural where there is an established Regard between two Persons ; and, he being able to bear it, at his Desire I gave him an Account of all my Transactions and Adventures from the Time of our Separation till now, Part of which he had received by Letter from his Father, who he informed me, much to my Joy, was alive and well, with Mr. *Sharpley* the elder ; but as to young *Sharpley*, he had not heard of him for some Time, near a Twelvemonth. He condoled with me like a Man that loved me on my Disasters, and congratulated me on my succeeding good Fortune, with an unfeigned Satisfaction. Upon enquiring after his Affairs, I found they had not been interspersed with any very extraordinary Accidents ; but that, in a settled Course of Traffic, he had made himself Master of a pretty Fortune ; that the Scene of his Business had not been solely confined to *Oporto* ; that he had frequently resided at *Lisbon*, from whence he had now brought a Cargo to *Madeira*, which having disposed of to great Advantage, he had a Thought of taking Passage with us for *Holland*, from whence he would provide himself with another Cargo to *Oporto* : His Letters from *England* were of much later Date than any of mine, and from them I learnt my Father and all our Friends were well in *Yorkshire*, where Mr. *Archer* proposed to visit us in about a Twelvemonth, and,

if

if Things went to his Mind, to settle in *London*. I was charmed at his Proposal of going with us to *Holland*, and assured him, he should want no Accommodations, if I myself was forced even to swing in an Hammock. Mr. *Archer's* Life hitherto had been one uniform Plan, wherein the Merchant had always the upper Hand ; and, in the Consideration of rising in his Profession, all the Starts and Passions of the Soul were centered ; indeed no Man seemed better cut out for Trade, having all the admired Principles of that Set of Men. As he had not mentioned a Word of Love in his whole Story, I could not imagine how he came to be attacked by the *Bravo's*, those Assaults being commonly the Result of some *Amour* ; and therefore I made free to ask him, If he knew the Meaning of his being set upon by them ? he told me he guessed somewhat of the Matter, and that his being carressed by *Don Henriques*, and his amiable Daughter, had raised the Hatred of *Don Juan de Carvalho*, a noble *Portuguese*, who had Pretensions to her ; and Love and Jealousy being almost always united in the *Portuguese*, that he had thus contrived to take him off. We entered into a Discourse of the base Principles that animate this Nation, and from thence into another on Duelling, which is so common in other Countries ; and Mr. *Saris* observed, that the Method of taking an Enemy off in this Manner, with the gloomy revengeful *Portuguese*, allowing for the different Notion of Things, that different People or Nations have was equally honourable when considered in this Light, that the single Combatant as well as the Assassinator thinks, nothing can retrieve his Honour but spilling the Blood of his Antagonist. Indeed the generous *Englishman*, and the *Frenchman*, opposes his Man singly, and Face to Face

but the same Principles inspire his Breast as do those of an *Italian*, when he stabs you behind with his *Stillette* ; for they pursue the same Ends, but by different Routs. If any Thing, the Practice of the *English* and *French* is more absurd ; for to have received an Injury, and at the same Time to put it into the Power of your Enemy to take your Life, is either confounding Right and Wrong, or is depending upon the Assistance of a Being in the Combat, who has declared, *He that sheds Man's Blood, by Man shall his Blood be shed*. Pity it is, that the utmost Contempt does not succeed such Encounters to both Parties, and that by a Public Brand, they were not separated from Society, as Aliens and Strangers to those amiable Propensities of human Nature, Mercy and Forgiveness of Injuries.

Captain *Beeckman* consenting at our Request to Mr. *Archer's* taking Passage with him, we accommodated him as well as we could ; and being quite recovered, and settling his Affairs, so as to find them as he wished, when he saw his Correspondent at *Lisbon*, we took Leave of all Friends and Acquaintance, and weighing, stood for the North-east, and were soon out of Sight of the Island, running afore the Wind with a fine Gale, which gave us Hopes of soon concluding our tedious Voyage. Fair and serene Weather continued during the Remainder of our Passage, which being at the most pleasant Season of the Year, yielded to us a great deal of Satisfaction ; and sure no one can describe the many Starts and Motions of Joy that filled my Heart, in approaching *Europe's* happy Seats after so long an Absence ; nay, the same Gladness shone in the Eyes of the meanest of our Crew, and even Mr. *Saris*, tho' oppressed with a black and deadly Melancholy, seemed inspired with Pleasure. It is Providence, it is Heaven itself, who has placed
in

in our Breasts that Inclination to our native Country, that directs and stimulates us in all our Actions ; that amiable Propensity to desire and long to behold and enjoy the Happiness of living, and dying, where we were first kindled into Life, and first became Members of Society ! Even the frozen *Laplander*, and the Sun-burnt *Hottentot*, have the same Sentiments, and deprived of their native, tho' comfortless Skies, are greatly unhappy, and, pining, feel the most pungent Sorrow.

We came to Anchor in that famous River, on which is seated the ever-renowned Mart of *Amsterdam*, and I thought for a long Time my Curiosity could never be satisfied, in viewing all the Wonders of that great Metropolis, not only of the *United Provinces*, but, I may also say, of the whole trading World ; and my two Companions, who were also before Strangers to the Place and Country, were as eager, as myself, to gratify themselves in inspecting the Laws and Customs of this wise and great People.

C H A P. LIV.

Mr. Saris departs for Ireland. — Archer takes Leave of Thompson, and embarks for Oporto. — He disposes of his Diamond to great Advantage. — Visits Rotterdam, and other Places. — Embarks in the Salisbury, Mac Kenzie, for London. — They are taken by the French.

MR. Saris having found an Opportunity to go to *Ireland* by a Ship bound to *Cork*, laid hold of it, and after taking the most tender Leave of each other, and promising to keep up an epistolary Correspondence, embarked for that Place, leaving it to my Care to remit him the Effects he had in *Truman's* Hands when I got to *England*,
when

where I would fain have persuaded him to accompany me ; but he was very eager to see his Son, and therefore I could not possibly expect that Gratification. Soon after his Departure, Mr. *Archer* having compleated a valuable Cargo for *Portugal*, also took his Leave of me, intrusting to my Care Letters to his Father, to mine and my Mother, and Mr. *Sharpley* the elder. I parted with him, with great Regret, and his Reluctance to separate was almost as great as mine ; but we comforted each other in the Consideration, that in about a Twelvemonth he would be able to complete all his Affairs Abroad, and return to *England*.

I applied to several eminent Jewellers to dispose of my large Diamond, which I was now resolved to turn into Money, in order to remit it to *England* ; but some thro' Ignorance, and others thro' Knavery put so low a Price upon it, that I was resolved not to dispose of it here at all : However at last I happened at a Coffee-house adjoining to the *Stadthouse*, to mention it to Mr. *Levy*, a noted *Jewish* Broker, who was in Raptures at the Sight of it, and undertook to get me a Customer ; which he accordingly did in the Prince of *Darmstadt*, whose Agent paid me down to the Amount of 22,000 *l.* which was more than ever I expected ; and I thought myself so obliged to the Fidelity and Address of *Levy*, that I insisted upon his accepting 200 Florins, beside what was usual for Commission ; and thus I found myself richer than I could in my most sanguine Hopes have desired, and immediately procured Bills payable at *London*, which I sent by the Packet to Mr. *Diaper*, reserving only about 500 *l.* to carry me Home, and for such other Matters as might occur. I now made the Tour of the Provinces, and saw the
most

most considerable Places in the Dominions of the Republic, and at length went to *Rotterdam*, with a View to get a Passage in some Ship for *England*, and found the *Salisbury*, Capt. *Mac Kenzie*, ready to sail; with whom agreeing, I embarked with him, and in three or four Days afterwards sailed for that Country my Soul now longed after, tho' it revived in my Mind a thousand Ideas, that gave me Pain inexpressible.

Captain *Mac Kenzie's* Ship was a very stout one, and well-manned; so notwithstanding Privateers swarmed in the *Channel* and *North Seas*, he was resolved not to wait for Convoy, but make the best of his Way alone, and accordingly we sailed with a favourable Wind; but abreast of the *North Foreland*, we were chased by a Privateer under *French* Colours, who, though we crouded all the Sail we could, wronged us greatly, and soon came up with us: She was a large Ship, full of Guns and Men; however *Mac Kenzie* resolved to do all he could to save himself, and edging down upon her, gave her a Broadside, which raked her fore and aft, and damaged her Rigging; our Salute was returned by the like Compliment, and all their Tops being manned with *Marines*, with small Arms, who discharged at the same Time, we had a Number of our Men killed and wounded, and Captain *Mac Kenzie* being shot thro' the Head, his Mate disabled, and all Things in Confusion, it was thought high Time to strike to the Enemy, who sent their Boat on Board of us, and leaving a Number of Hands behind them, took me and two or three other Passengers with them to appear before their Captain, whose Name was *Le Serre*, and the Privateer's the *Terrible*, belonging to *Havre de Grace*. He behaved with an Extremity of Politeness, returned us our Swords, made

made us dine with him, and forbid his Men to strip any of the Prisoners, to whom he acted with great Generosity and Tenderneſs. He found his Prize a very good one, which perhaps not a little contributed to his pleaſant Temper, for we were laden with a very valuable Cargo. My Loſs was very trifling, conſiſting principally of what Money I had about me ; and *Le Serre* very much diſtinguiſhed me, and ſeemed greatly pleaſed with my Converſation. And thus I found myſelf in the Condition of a Captive, tho' it did not give me much Pain, as there had, I underſtood, been a Cartel ſettled between the two Nations for the Exchange of Priſoners : Nay, I was not a little pleaſed that I ſhould have an Opportunity to ſee *France*, which I had a long Time deſired.

C H A P. LV.

He ſets out for Paris.—He relieves an Engliſh Officer in Diſtreſs.—Finds him to be an old Friend.—They ſatisfy one another in the Relation of their Adventures.—They viſit Verſailles.—The Officer falls in Love with a Lady they meet in the Gardens.

HAVING diſpoſed of Matters in the Prize and on Board the *Terrible*, the Captain carried us into *Dunkirk*, where our Men were put into the Priſon ; but, as to myſelf and the reſt of the Paſſengers, we had Liberty upon our *Parole*, to walk in the Town, ſo that we did not go near the Works, which they are very cautious leſt any Stranger ſhould inſpect. We had a Houſe assigned us to lodge in, and from thence, when a little ſettled, I wrote to my Father, *Truman*, and other Friends

Friends in *England*, to whom I had also before wrote from *Rotterdam*, acquainting them with the Misfortune that had happened to me, and letting them know that I had drawn a Bill for 200 *l.* payable on Sight, to Monsieur *Varillon*, or his Order in *London*. I received an Answer in about a Month; after condoling with me on my Mishap, they informed me, that *Truman*, with my Effects, had arrived safe in *England*, and that they had disposed every thing for my Benefit; that the Bills I sent from *Holland* had been paid, and that all my Friends were in Health, and longed for nothing so much as to see me; and Mr. *Goodwill* had got Letters from a great Man to the Minister of the *Marine* in *France*, by which he did not doubt they should hear I was immediately released; and this Way they the rather took, as no Cartel Ship would sail to *France* for some Time. My Mother's Letter was full of Tendernefs, and all that Affection and Regard she preserved in her Breast for her Son, of which I had had so many and so great Instances. One Thing gave me a high Satisfaction, which was, that I received a Letter from my Friend *Diaper*, who had safely arrived in *England*, and only waited my coming Home to celebrate his Nuptials with his dearest Miss *Bellair*. In about ten Days, after I had the Pleasure of receiving these Letters, which set my Heart at Rest, an Order came to the *Governor of Dunkirk*, to release an *English* Gentleman, whose Name was *Thompson*, and to suffer him to depart to whatever Place his Inclination led him; and I accordingly was sent for by him, and acquainted with the News. I returned him my Thanks in the best Manner I could, and he staid me to dine with him; and I wrote a Letter of Acknowledgment to the Minister, and hoped I should be permitted to thank him

him in Person at my Arrival at *Paris*, where I proposed to do myself the Honour to go as soon as I had settled my Affairs at *Dunkirk*. This I had no sooner done, and received Remittances from *London*, than I resolved to set out for *Paris*; but before I went, thought I could not leave *Dunkirk*, with Satisfaction to my Mind, unless I endeavoured to soften the Rigours of my Countrymen's Confinement, who were now very numerous; and, accordingly, I went to the Place of their Durance, and bestowed upon each of them a Sum of Money, and for the Use of the Ship's Crew I was taken in, I left a considerable Sum in the Hands of Mr. *Postlethwaite*, an *English* Merchant residing at *Dunkirk*, with a Desire that he would issue it out to them, as he thought in his Discretion they needed it. *Dunkirk* is not more formidable at present to this Nation, by its Situation and the Works that have been carried on there, than as it is the Receptacle and Asylum of almost all the Outlaws, Bankrupts and Smugglers, that are forced to leave their native Country for Fear of Punishment for their Crimes and Frauds; the latter particularly, who are constantly employed in Defiance of our Laws, in making Trips over to *England* with unaccustomed Goods, are of the greatest Service to the *French*, by the early Intelligence they give their Merchants of the Men of War and Privateers that sail from our Ports, with their Destination, by which they are able to steer such Courses, as they may avoid the Danger of being made Prize of; so that no Set of People meet with more Countenance here, or are more encouraged by the Governors of all their Sea-port Towns.

I hired a proper Conveyance, and set out by Way of *Graveline* to *Calais*, and from thence took Passage in the Coach for *Paris*. Our Company

pany consisted of three or four *French* Officers and a *Dominican*, who was going to that Metropolis, having procured a Chaplainship to a Person of Distinction there. Nothing could be more entertaining than this Company, and the usual Politeness of the *French* Nation made our Journey infinitely agreeable. At *Amiens* one of our Companions left us, whose Place was supplied by an *English* Gentleman, who seemed in Person and Temper formed to please : It is natural for one to be very curious in knowing the Affairs that detain our Countrymen in *France* at this Time, and in a free and genteel Way he informed us, that he had been Captain of the *Spy*, an *English* Sloop of War, which was in pursuing a *French* Privateer too eagerly, run on Shore upon the Coast of *France*, where, after losing their Vessel, they were obliged to seek for Shelter in their Longboat, and were made Prisoners of War ; that his Crew had been with himself exchanged, but having contracted a Friendship with the *Sieur du Pléssis*, Captain of the *Amiable*, a *French* Ship of War, he had accorded to an Invitation he made him to pay him a Visit at *Paris*. The Rest of this Gentleman's Discourse gave me a very high Idea of his good Sense, and there was somewhat so sweet seemingly in his Disposition, that one could not avoid loving him. At *Beauvais*, for we took that Road, this Gentleman called me on one Side, and begging my Pardon, desired I would with Patience and Candour hear him make a Request to me, which, from his Knowledge of his Countrymen's Generosity, and from some Things he had heard me advance in Discourse, he had great Hopes I would freely grant him : In short, Sir, I am unhappy enough to have been robbed between *Calais* and *Amiens*, by two *Irish* Soldiers, of all I had about me, and I can't promise myself to receive

Money

Money for some Weeks, even when I come to *Paris*: At present I have only one *Livre* about me, and am unable to pay my Reckoning and Coach-hire; but if you can have so much Confidence in me, as to lend me a few *Livres*, you may depend upon it I will most faithfully repay you again. I took him by the Hand, and told him, he obliged me by his Request, and feeling in my Purse drew forth half the Contents, and put it into his Hands, amounting to some *Louis d'Ors*. He stood silent for some Time, and then advancing, caught me eagerly in his Arms, and could not find Words to express his Acknowledgments; at length he cried, Would to God, Sir, I may merit your Friendship, for I already feel I shall be unhappy, if I am not esteem'd by you; and perhaps, Sir, you may one Time or other think it no Disgrace to be known by *Sbarpley*.—*Sbarpley*! I replied, with a remarkable Alteration of Voice and Countenance, it can't be; pray, dear Sir, what Countryman are you? If of *Yorkshire*, as my Heart seems to tell me, I shall count myself happy; I am, Sir, I am of that Country, he rejoined with Precipitation; but, dear Sir, are you acquainted with that Name and Family? I am not only acquainted, Sir, but love them all as well as I do myself, and am surprized at my Dulness, that I could not discover my dear Friend before: Come to my Arms, and partake of all that is mine; for our antient Tie of Friendship entitles you to it.—Is it possible you should not remember *Thompson*? *Thompson*! he cried, what?—Yes,—my dear *Joey*! It is he himself, and that accounts for the Impulses I felt in his Favour! We embraced, and I believe no one was ever Witness to so much mutual Love and Tenderneſs between two Friends; we were never tired with gazing at each

each other ; and this unexpected Meeting in a Foreign Country,—in such Circumstances,—gave a Flow of Pleasure and Satisfaction, that Expression is too faint to describe: There was somewhat in *Sharpley* more like myself than in *Archer* ; he was a more generous open Soul, his Scene of Life had been as much varied as my own, and he had all that native Freedom and Generosity in his Breast and Actions, that cannot fail of raising Love and Esteem. We even wept on both Sides, and quite forgot that we were going to *Paris*, had not the Driver of the *Voiture* awakened us from our Transports, by telling us, it was Time to prepare for going. The rest of our Journey was full of the encreased Pleasure arising from the Company of such a Friend, and we arrived safely at *Paris*, where *Sharpley* insisted on my accompanying him to the House of *Monsieur du Pleffis*, where that Gentleman, in the politest Manner, begged us to make it our own whilst we staid. It was in the Street of *St. Honore*, and himself and his Family were such engaging People, that I thought myself quite happy in their Society ; and as to *Sharpley* he was treated by *du Pleffis*, more like a Brother than an Acquaintance. He had received some Wounds in an Encounter with an *English* Ship of War, and had obtained Leave for his Bravery, to spend some Months with his Family in this City, where the best and greatest Company daily resorted to see him. When we were a little settled, I called my Friend on one Side, and told him as he expected no Remittance from his Agent for some Time, I begged he would make free with my Purse, and let us share it ; that as to my Part, I was so situated, that I could have Money enough of any Banker in *Paris*, and therefore insisted upon it, that he should deal with it as his own, without Reserve ; he
thanked

thanked me in the warmest Manner, and we immediately shared what I had remaining about me, and began to live in common with that Openness that distinguishes Friends and Gentlemen, from the avaritious and penurious Creatures that only pretend to those sublime Principles, that we felt at the Bottom of our Hearts.

Hail, holy Friendship, that inspires the Bosom with generous Warmth and Harmony ! that tunes the Soul to Notes of highest Concord, and compensates for all the Ills of Life ! Born with this Principle towards each other, this kind, this heavenly Motion to mutual Love and soft Benevolence, nothing but Passion's fell detested Reign, and baneful Vice in her malignest Progress, can break the native Tie that knits Mankind together ! a Tie as necessary to Societies as it is to Individuals. It lessens Loads of Woe, with aching Sympathy and tenderest Compassion ; and Joy, which loves to be communicate, encreases more and more, whenever it finds Partakers in its Transports. The Wretch, all Gloom, who has not, does not feel thy Influence, lives a most jealous, most suspicious Creature ; forlorn, he stalks about all comfortless, and knows he wants the friendly Aid, the powerful Assistance, to ward each fatal Blow that threats Destruction to his Peace and Quiet ! Oh ! may I never live devoid of thee ! Benign and lovely Sweetner of my Life, dear Consolation to the troubled Breast.

When we found a proper Opportunity, according to my Friend's earnest Desire, I gave him an Account of all the Accidents that had befallen me, since he first went to Sea, at which he expressed the utmost Surprize ; and when I related the Death of my *Louisa*, and my Despair and
Distraction

Distraction after that melancholy Occurrence, he could not refrain Tears, which plentifully trickled down his Cheeks, and testified more than any Thing the Affection he bore me. He then gratified me with an Account of his own Adventures, which principally consisted of Sea Voyages, and Affairs, and Descriptions of such Places in the several Parts of the World, as he had visited: He had wrote to his Father since his being taken Prisoner; but had received no Answer; so that he was obliged to me for the latest Accounts how Affairs stood at Home, at which he was very much pleased, particularly to hear that his Father was well: He had not seen him since his first going to Sea, nor had been in *England* but once, when he was fitted out for a Cruise in the *Spy*, and they had then only an Opportunity to receive one Letter from each other. He had taken some Prizes, which had turned to a good Account, as his Agent on *Towerbill* had informed him, so that exclusive of his Pay, he was Master of a comfortable Sum of Money, and had endured such Number of Fatigues in the Service, that, tho' he had an entire Affection for his *King* and Country's Interest, he longed for nothing more than to retire into *Yorkshire*, and there enjoy some Years of Quiet; and for that Purpose was resolved to return with me, after seeing what was worthy a curious Observation in *France*. I was charmed to hear his Inclination, and embracing him, told him that his Interest should be ever mine, and that as to Money, he never need want it, whilst I had any in my Possession. He received this Declaration with so visible an Emotion, and so many Acknowledgments, that I was obliged to insist upon ceasing the Discourse, which, with some Difficulty, I brought him to do; for *Sbarpley's* Sea-faring Life had not robbed him

of

of his natural Eloquence, and I found those Rudiments of Science, and those great and noble Principles he had received from his worthy Tutor and mine were rather inforced and strengthened by the Observations he had made, than weakened by a Life of Turmoil, Noise and Hurry, accompanied with the usual Dangers that fall to the Lot of Gentlemen of his Profession; and, indeed, it is the Misfortune of most of the Officers of the Navy, that they are sent very young to Sea, before they have made that Progress in Learning that would polish and brighten their future Conduct; and the Sages of the Sea may say what they will, but so early an Initiation is no more necessary in that Art than in the Science of the Army, where you ever find the finest and most polite Gentlemen, and the smallest Number of Brutes. It was no Wonder at all that we did not immediately know one another, for *Sbarpley*, when a Lad, was thin and spare, and of a very fair Complexion; but now he had increased in Bulk greatly, tho' it had not taken away from, but rather added to his Gentility, and was of a swarthy Complexion, which, together with the Difference a modish Dress and a Wig occasioned, very well might conceal him. I think I never saw a Man, who looked more like a Person of Distinction and Importance, and his every Look and Action bespoke the good Opinion of all that beheld him. As to my Part, I was grown very thin, and was of as black an Hue, as a *Mullatto*, from the intense Heat of the Climate I came from. I had also lost my Hair and wore a Peruke, and the Richness of my Habit might with all this very much disguise young *Yorkshire*; and I had contracted such a careless Way of wearing my Apparel, in which I used to be remarkably neat, ever since the Loss of my dear, my much lamented *Louisa*,
that

that I
ture,
Sbarpley
Mr
Sompie
tleme
and P
Italia
of H
had
Cbrij
Ball,
ly:
a wi
Soign
all t
Gen
twic
othe
adm
the
to I
I v
Sen
the
Ga
nev
we
del
ma
of
of
in
w
M
th
ci

that I could not but seem a quite different Creature, even to these who had seen me since Mr. Sharpley.

Mr. *Du Pleffis* was so kind, with *Monf. De Bassompierre*, his Nephew, and some other *French* Gentlemen, to carry us to all the public Diversions and Places in *Paris*; the *Theatre*, the *French* and *Italian Opera*; and, by the Favour of the Marquis of *Houdaincourt*, a particular Friend of his, we had the Honour to be introduced to his *Most Christian Majesty's Presence*, to see him dance at a Ball, and dine several Times with the *Royal Family*: We were also present when his Majesty killed a wild Boar, with his own Hand in the Wood of *Soignies*. We visited *Fontainbleau*, *Marli*, and all the remarkable Palaces of the Nobility and Gentry thereabout; and were also, once or twice, on a Party of Pleasure at *St. Dennis*, and other publick Places of Resort; nor could help admiring that Sweetness and *Politesse* that make the Inhabitants of this Country so very agreeable to Foreigners. One Object still remained, which, I was resolved we should thoroughly feast our Senses upon, before we left *France*, which was, the stately Palace of *Versailles*, and its admired Gardens and Prospects; and, several of our new Friends determining to accompany us there, we set out, in the Marquis's Coach, for that delightful Place.

We were three or four Days in viewing this magnificent Palace; and were so lost in a Field of Wonders, that it was with Regret we thought of leaving the Charming Spot. Sure nothing in the World can equal the Beauties that everywhere around delight the Eye, and exalt the Mind! The superb Apartments, decked with all that Art and Science can furnish; and the spacious Gardens, in a thousand Varieties, seem the favourite

favourite Retreat of all the rural Deities.—*Flora* has here bestowed her choicest Graces ; and the *Dryads* sport in every Labyrinth and Grove of this immortal Monument of the Glory of *Lewis XIV.* who certainly went, amidst a Thirst of *Empire*, the only Way to deserve the Name of Great, by becoming the Patron of all the Distinguished and Learned in every Profession ; and like *Augustus*, cherished those Artists that were sure to make him live for ever. Here he laid, more than by his Conquests, the Foundation of an universal *Empire* ; and, if any Thing contributes, some Time or other, to give his Country that Distinction, 'twill proceed from their cultivating *Wisdom, Discipline, and liberal Arts* ; and, thereby procuring a Respect, Esteem, and Veneration, from all Nations, how low, in general, act by her Maxims, speak her Language, and imbibe all the Politeness and Gentility, so natural to her. In short, she sits supreme in Literature ; and gives her Laws with so much amiable Sweetness, that the whole World yields ready and willing Homage.

We were taking our last View of this Pride of *France*, when, walking thro' one of the Alleys, we met two Ladies, one of them masqued, who, at our Approach, would have directed their Steps another Way ; but, seeing them under some Embarrassment, we would have retired ; and I said to *Sharpley*, Let us, Sir, turn down the next Walk ; when the masqued Lady exclaimed, Good God ! What do I see ? and fainted in the Arms of her Companion. The Sweetness of the Voice attracted all Ears but mine, who had been deaf so long, and blind to all Female Perfection ; so I kept on my Way, with Mr. *du Plessis*, whilst *Sharpley*, the Marquis, and *Bassompierre*, flew to the Assistance of the Ladies. The fainting Fair-

one

one had just come to herself, and handsomely returned Thanks for their kind Intentions ; but seemed to cast her Eyes on every Side, as if to seek somewhat she wanted ; and heaved a re-pining Sigh, when she could not discover it. The other Lady inforced her Compliments, and would have withdrawn ; but the Marquis enquired of a Footman, who attended them, If they had any Convenience waiting to carry them Home ? Which he answering in the Negative, insisted upon their accepting his Coach ; and *Sharpley* offered his Service to attend on them ; which, after some Denials, they, with seeming Reluctance, accepted ; and, ordering the Coachman to drive to *St. Clou*, left them, full of Admiration at their uncommon Beauty. We went to *Paris* that Evening, in a Coach we borrowed of the *Marchioness de Gesvres*, where we found Mr *Sharpley* had just arrived before us. He appeared so grave and so much upon the Reserve, that he was bantered by the whole Company, who told him his Civility to the unknown Ladies had lost him his Heart. He smiled, and made an evasive Answer, which only confirmed us in the Truth of our Observation. When we went to Rest, he made an Excuse to visit me in my Apartment, and then told me he feared he was a miserable Creature if he could not engage the Attention of one of the Ladies he had conveyed Home, to his Addresses. My Friend, he cried, in Rapture, Never was so finished a Piece in the Creation, as this lovely Creature ; and the Beauties of her Mind far excel those of her Person ; besides, she is so inartfully merry and debonaire, that she exactly suits my Temper, and I cannot live without possessing her ; lend me your Assistance, dear *Joey*, and I'll be your Slave the Remainder of my Life. The other is also a perfect

Beauty, but too melancholy and pensive for my Disposition ; and, if I judge rightly, has some great Load of Sorrow at her Heart, by her frequent Sighing, and the involuntary Tears that trickled now and then down her lovely Face : In short, they are our Countrywomen ; the one the Daughter, and the other the Niece, to an elderly Lady, that has resided some Years in *France*. They keep little Company, and have done me the Honour to give me a general Invitation to see them at their House at *St. Clou*, which is a large and spacious Edifice ; and they live, in all Respects, like Persons of the first Quality. Oh ! how happy should I be, could I obtain so dear a Companion to solace the future Hours of my Life ! One Thing surprized me, which was, that the melancholy one, who is the Niece, enquired particularly after the Names of the Gentlemen she saw us with at *Versailles* ; and, amongst the rest, asked who the Gentleman in Scarlet and Gold was, who left the Walk with the old one, in Complaisance to them ; and I had no sooner told them you was our Countryman, and that your Name was *Thompson*, than she fainted away, and wept most piteously ; and, in that Condition, was borne off to Bed ; her Cousin and Aunt assuring me they were Accidents very frequent with her, and that she had been troubled with such Fits from her Infancy : However, the Discourse was still continued ; and my Charmer particularly enquired, If you was married, and what Part of the World you came from last ? I satisfied their Enquiries ; and, it's my Opinion, (tho' I know it's what you neither like nor desire) that you have, at first Sight, smitten the Niece, in a Manner that I should be rejoiced to melt her Cousin to, after Years of longing Servitude. I
congratulated

congratulated *Sharpley* on his good Fortune, and promised him, if I could any Way serve him in his Amour, I would ; and, after mutually embracing one another, we parted, and went to Bed.

CHAP. LVI.

Sharpley makes great Progress in his Amour.—— Recommends a Page to Thompson, at the Request of Serena.——He sets out for the Marquis de Houdaincourt's Seat in Normandy.——They are attacked by Banditti.——His Life saved by his Page.——The Story of the Marquis and the beautiful Marguerite d'Aulnay.——They release her from her Confinement.——She is married to the Marquis.

MY Friend was now almost constantly at the Feet of his Mistress ; and, tho' he could not prevail upon me to accompany him to her Hotel, yet I heard from Time to Time, from him, that he had Reason to think himself a very happy Man, and that *Serena*, that was the Name of his Beloved, made him all the Returns that so faithful and tender a Passion deserved. I should, had it been necessary to him, have made no Difficulty of visiting that Lady, and her Family, as they often had requested, by him, that I would ; but the Account he gave me before, of the Sensibility of the Niece, deterred me. I had too much Honour to trifle with a Lady in so important an Affair, as that which concerned, I presumed, the Happiness of her future Life : and my Resolution was so honestly and firmly fixed, never to think of Woman more, since the Loss of my *Louisa*, that I would ex-

pose myself to no Temptations from the fascinating Sex. These Reasons *Sbarpley* could not help acknowledging were unanswerable, and ceased to press me any more on that Head.

One Day he told me he had a Proposal to make to me, which he hoped, for his Sake, I would not refuse him ; I told him I could not conceive any Thing could be asked of me, by him, that I should have the least Pretence to refuse : Then, I'll tell you, my dear Friend, he replied, my *Serena*, to whom I have frequently from the Overflowings of my Heart, given an Account of our mutual Friendship, and those excellent Qualities you possess, has enquired if you had any faithful Servant about you ; and, upon my informing her, that neither you, nor myself, had any other than two we had hired since we came to *Paris*, who did not much suit our Disposition ; she told me she had the Son of an unfortunate Officer to provide for, and would take it as the kindest Favour I could confer upon her, if I would endeavour to prevail on you to take him into your Service, as a Page ; and I hope, dear *Joey*, you will do me that Favour ; and, as the Niece is out of Town, that you'll further wait on *Serena*, and take him from her Hand. I liked Mr. *Sbarpley's* Proposal exceeding well, as I had no one about me that I could confide in ; and promised next Morning to wait on *Serena*, and accept the Youth from her. *Sbarpley* was all Joy at my Condescension, and took Care that I should not forget my Appointment. We were received by that Lady who was extremely handsome, and her Mother, with the utmost Respect ; and how, I can't tell, but I felt a Pleasure in conversing with them that I thought I should never again feel in any Female Company.

Company. They seemed as natural to me as my own Relations would have been, and after talking over the Merits and Abilities of the Youth I was going to take into my Service ; and, promising the kindest Usage, for her and her Mother's Sake, he was called in, and appeared before us. The Minute I cast my Eye upon him, I was prejudiced in his Favour. He had a certain sweet Softness, in his Features and Address, that was very taking ; but what gave me still a stronger Liking to him, was, that, allowing for the Difference of Sex, he was so exactly the Picture of my poor *Louisa*, that the Sight of him produced such Agitations in me, that I was almost ready to swoon ; and I had Reason to think he liked his Master, also, at first View, for, seeing me in such Convulsions, he turned as pale as Death, and his Knees tottered under him. Good God ! I cried, was ever so near a Resemblance ! Oh ! *Sharpley*, 'tis the Picture, the real Image of my *Louisa* ! which is so strongly and lastingly engraved in my Heart. Alas ! Madam, I continued, turning to *Serena*, you are going to give me eternal Torment, by recommending to me this young Gentleman, who will, every Time I look upon him, put me in Mind of the greatest Loss a Man could ever suffer. *Sharpley*, and the two Ladies could scarce refrain from Tears, the Rest of my Speech was so moving ; and as to *Estampe*, for that was the Name of the young Lad, he wept sincerely, which still added to my Regard for him ; and, notwithstanding the Trouble it gave me to look on him, I resolved to carry him Home with me, which I did accordingly.

I gave him some Lessons, as to his Conduct and future Behaviour ; and conceived so well of him, that I gave him immediate Charge of all my Papers, and every Thing else that was valuable ;

pose myself to no Temptations from the fascinating Sex. These Reasons *Sbarpley* could not help acknowledging were unanswerable, and ceased to press me any more on that Head.

One Day he told me he had a Proposal to make to me, which he hoped, for his Sake, I would not refuse him ; I told him I could not conceive any Thing could be asked of me, by him, that I should have the least Pretence to refuse : Then, I'll tell you, my dear Friend, he replied, my *Serena*, to whom I have frequently from the Overflowings of my Heart, given an Account of our mutual Friendship, and those excellent Qualities you possess, has enquired if you had any faithful Servant about you ; and, upon my informing her, that neither you, nor myself, had any other than two we had hired since we came to *Paris*, who did not much suit our Disposition ; she told me she had the Son of an unfortunate Officer to provide for, and would take it as the kindest Favour I could confer upon her, if I would endeavour to prevail on you to take him into your Service, as a Page ; and I hope, dear *Jaez*, you will do me that Favour ; and, as the Niece is out of Town, that you'll further wait on *Serena*, and take him from her Hand. I liked Mr. *Sbarpley's* Proposal exceeding well, as I had no one about me that I could confide in ; and promised next Morning to wait on *Serena*, and accept the Youth from her. *Sbarpley* was all Joy at my Condescension, and took Care that I should not forget my Appointment. We were received by that Lady who was extremely handsome, and her Mother, with the utmost Respect ; and how, I can't tell, but I felt a Pleasure in conversing with them that I thought I should never again feel in any Female Company.

Company. They seemed as natural to me as my own Relations would have been, and after talking over the Merits and Abilities of the Youth I was going to take into my Service ; and, promising the kindest Usage, for her and her Mother's Sake, he was called in, and appeared before us. The Minute I cast my Eye upon him, I was prejudiced in his Favour. He had a certain sweet Softness, in his Features and Address, that was very taking ; but what gave me still a stronger Liking to him, was, that, allowing for the Difference of Sex, he was so exactly the Picture of my poor *Louisa*, that the Sight of him produced such Agitations in me, that I was almost ready to swoon ; and I had Reason to think he liked his Master, also, at first View, for, seeing me in such Convulsions, he turned as pale as Death, and his Knees tottered under him. Good God ! I cried, was ever so near a Resemblance ! Oh ! *Sharpley*, 'tis the Picture, the real Image of my *Louisa* ! which is so strongly and lastingly engraved in my Heart. Alas ! Madam, I continued, turning to *Serena*, you are going to give me eternal Torment, by recommending to me this young Gentleman, who will, every Time I look upon him, put me in Mind of the greatest Loss a Man could ever suffer. *Sharpley*, and the two Ladies could scarce refrain from Tears, the Rest of my Speech was so moving ; and as to *Estampe*, for that was the Name of the young Lad, he wept sincerely, which still added to my Regard for him ; and, notwithstanding the Trouble it gave me to look on him, I resolved to carry him Home with me, which I did accordingly.

I gave him some Lessons, as to his Conduct and future Behaviour ; and conceived so well of him, that I gave him immediate Charge of all my Papers, and every Thing else that was valuable ;

suffered him to sit at Table with me ; and recommended him strongly to the Care of *Madam du Plessis*, and his Family, whilst I staid at *Paris* ; and, in short, I grew soon so fond of him, that I could hardly bear him out of my Sight. I appointed him an Apartment to himself, as he professed an Aversion to lying with his own Sex, and did every Thing, that I thought would be agreeable to him. On his Side, he shewed all the Attachment to me I could wish for ; he prevented all my Wishes, by his Diligence ; and when, for I concealed nothing from him, I used to lament my *Louisa*, he sympathised with me, in such a Manner, that I was fearful, sometimes, it would hurt his Health. He, now and then, waited on *Serena* and her Mother, who returned me innumerable Thanks for the Favours I bestowed, every Day, upon their *Estatue*, for so they used to call him ; as they had, as they informed me, bred him up from a Child. He was very cautious and sparing, when I desired an Account of himself and his Family ; contenting himself with telling me, that his Father was an Officer in the *Swiss* Guards, who, dying, left him, a Sister and their Mother, in great Distress, having been an extravagant and expensive Man ; that *Serena's* Mother had bred them up, thro' Charity, and given him those Sentiments of Generosity and Gentility I so much admired ; that, as to his Mother, she had been dead near a Twelvemonth, having subsisted, to the Hour of her Death, on the Bounty of the same good and benevolent Family ; and that he was in Hopes he should never want another Friend. I assured him he never should, and that I esteemed him rather as a Brother than a Servant.

About this Time the *Marquis de Houdaincourt* gave me an Invitation to spend some Weeks with him

him at a Seat he had in *Normandy*, and engaged *Du Plessis* and *Bassampiere* to be of the Party; and would have prevailed on *Sharpley* to go, but he was too deeply engaged with *Serena* to leave her Company so soon. We set out for that Province, which I was the more desirous of viewing, as it contained so many Monuments of the Bravery of our noble Ancestors, who here, in Thousands, lost their Lives, to preserve Possessions on the Continent; which will always be detrimental to the Nation. His House and Estate lay near *Elbeuf*, in a pleasant Country watered by a Branch of the *Seine*, and surrounded by other Noblemen and Gentlemen's Estates and Castles. We were received with peculiar Distinction, and made daily Visits to the Cities and Towns about it, gratifying our Curiosity with every Thing remarkable to be seen. The *Normans* are a brave, industrious, and honest People, who remember their former Independency, and regret the Loss of it; retaining, still, some Customs and Privileges that all the Power of the Court of *France* has not hitherto been able to deprive them of. In one of our Excursions, when only the *Marquis*, myself, and *Eftampe*, were going to *Caen*, we were attacked by three Banditti, at the Edge of a Forest we had just before passed thro', who, without giving us the least Notice, fired upon us, but without doing us any Damage, save frightening our Horses. *Eftampe* trembled every Joint, whilst the *Marquis*, and myself, fired each, one of our Pistols, on the Robbers, and brought one of them down, who thus paid for his Rashness with his Life. The other two then fired upon us with their Pistols again, the Balls whistling by our Ears without doing Execution; and our Horses being pretty unruly, we dismounted, fired our other Pistols, flung them at their Heads,

and attacked them Sword in Hand: The Villains stood it well; but Fortune had nearly given us the Victory, and we found but a faint Resistance, when another of the Rogues, drawn by the Noise of Firing, rode up to the Assistance of his Comrades, and attacked me behind, and would have clove me down the Skull before I was aware; when my Page gave a loud Shriek, and, advancing, fired one of his Pistols at the new Comer, which luckily sent a Shot thro' his Brain; and the other seeing this, left their Horses, and made a Retreat into the thickest of the Forest, where it was in vain for us to pursue them. Poor *Eftampe* lay on the Ground, and I was beginning to bewail his Fate, when he rose up, and convinced us nothing but Fear had cast him upon his Face, after he had so readily opened me a Deliverance, in the Manner just recited. I did not expect much Courage from such a Youth, and, without reproaching him for the Want of what is merely mechanical, and to be acquired by long Practice and Custom, I thought I could not dispense with myself from shewing my Gratitude by a Multitude of Caresses, and by making him a Present of my Purse, as an Encouragement to him; and the *Marquis* would have done the same; but how greatly were we surprized, when he said, Gentlemen, let me have the Merit of having done some Service to you and myself, without impeaching it by taking a Reward for what was my Duty and my own Interest? We put our Money up, and I began to perceive all that Nobility of Heart in this Youth, that would have adorned a more exalted Station, which still more and more raised my Love and Esteem for him. We caught our Horses, and, mounting, went to the destined Place, and from thence
by

by another Way returned Home safely. I cannot here help making some Reflections upon what the World generally calls *Courage* and *Bravery*, which I believe in some few Breasts to be constitutional, or flowing from a particular Quality of the Blood and Juices; but in most, from a mechanical acquired Habit of reasoning themselves out of their Fear, which may be said to be natural: Thus, a certain great General would duck his Head at the first Discharge that was made on either Side; but, recollecting himself, and standing two or three Fires, his Reason got the better of his Apprehension, and he boldly plunged into Blood and Confusion. If Courage is then a Principle or Virtue to be acquired, can we blame a Person who is destitute of it, if he has not had such Opportunities of learning it, as generally falls to the Lot of a particular Set of People; or if the same noble Juices warm not his Heart, as disten'd our own to Fortitude and Valour? The Country *Lout*, at first hears with Terror the Cannons roar, and the Din of War; but Use and Custom soon conquers his natural Aversion to those shocking Scenes, and he rushes into the Battle with a Thirst of Glory, and joins coolly in the Sack of Towns and the Pillage of the poor Inhabitants; but this let me insist upon, that even the unthinking common Soldier and Sailor, as well as the thinking Officer, feels at his first Onset a Palpitation of Heart, which the Continuance of the Fight, and the Example of each other soon overcomes. When we had been some Time with the *Marquis*, he one Morning told us, that we should not depart without first doing him a Piece of Service which he did not doubt of our Assistance in, as it was to relieve oppressed and distressed Innocence, and immediately accounted for his Request in the following Manner:

It was about three Years ago, that at a public Assembly at *Paris*, I lost my Heart to one of the finest young Ladies of this Province, who was then with her Father, who came to that City to solicit for a Post in the Government here. She was tall, remarkably well shaped, and her Skin like Alabaster ; her majestic Aspect commanded Respect, at the same Time, that her lovely Eyes that swam in heavenly Moisture, and her good-natured Behaviour encouraged the Approach of her Adorers, who were very numerous, and the Beauties of her Mind set off the Graces of her Person. I was so struck with her Charms, that I learnt her Father's Business at Court, and an Opportunity serving, did him such effectual Service with the *Minister of State*, that he could not help returning me Thanks, and inviting me to see me at his Lodgings, which were in one of the best Quarters of *Paris*. I knew little of him in *Normandy*, where the common Report proclaimed him an avaritious, revengeful Wretch, whose God was Gain, and whose greatest Happiness consisted in amassing Riches. He had only his Daughter *Marguerite*, and another named *Bellimante*, who was crooked and otherwise deformed ; but more so in her Mind than in her Body, which made her the Aversion of every one that approached her : In short, she was the very Reverse of her beautiful Sister. *D'Aulnay* had married a second Wife, about 20 Years younger than himself, who was an intriguing artful Lady, and was in Hopes by her Management to get every Penny at his Death, which he was thro' all the Perils and Dangers the Scripture warns us of, making himself Master of by Injustice, Cruelty and Oppression. I soon got the entire Affection of the lovely *Marguerite*, without its being perceived by any of the Family ;
and

and we were quite happy in the Prospect that *d'Aulnay* could not refuse his Consent to my marrying his Daughter, as my Rank and Fortune was far superior to his ; but unluckily for us, *Madame d'Aulnay* cast a favourable Eye upon me, and quite inflamed with Lust, made a Declaration in such Terms to me, as called up all the Blood into my Cheeks. I was so surprized, that I was unprepared for an Answer ; but at Length I recovered, and read her Ladyship such a Lesson of conjugal Duty, that she vowed Revenge, and was soon after too much in a Capacity to execute it. I made a Proposal of Marriage to him between his Daughter and myself ; but *Madame d'Aulnay* had been before hand with me, and represented to him, that I had made an Attempt upon her Honour, and desired him to forbid me the House ; and therefore he received my Proposal with cutting Disdain, and never desired to see me more. I asked him the Reasons of his surprizing Conduct ; but he refused any, upon which I rose up, and in a great Passion told him, which I own was imprudent, that I valued not a Fortune, and, if his Daughter would consent, would soon release her from his odious Tyranny. His Wife was soon informed of the Affair, and now no longer doubted that I had refused her Offer, in Consideration of my Love to her Daughter-in-law ; for bad and designing People cannot possibly apprehend, that any Body can act virtuously but from a View of private Interest, and think all the World as vile as themselves ; she, therefore, got the Custody of her Daughter committed to her Charge, and employed her Sister as her Deputy ; under which Management she underwent the most shocking Mortifications and Hardships, which were increased by her being guarded so strictly, that it was impossible for us to correspond

respond together. I sought out by all the Ways I could ; to transmit a Letter to her Hands, but in vain and at length she was carried to his Castle, about three Leagues from hence, where every Servant is an *Argus* ; notwithstanding which, I have Yesterday, by disguising myself as a Workman, a Number being employed at present in making some Repairs in his Mansion house, delivered a Letter to her Hands as she walked in the Garden, by which I have appointed her to be ready Tomorrow Night at Six o'Clock in the Park, where her Mother permits her sometimes with herself and her Sister to walk ; when, with Heaven's Help, and your kind Assistance, I am resolved to take her from her Tyrants, and make her mine, for which I have got a Licence ready. We consented to bear him Company, and set out at the Hour appointed, and had not been long at our Station, well armed, before we saw the beautiful *Marguerite* appear, attended by her two Tormentors, who shewed all the Animosity in their Behaviour to the poor Lady, that could be ; whilst she, conscious of approaching Relief, had a Countenance, in which Joy seemed to seek Shelter under the Mask of Sadness. When they came pretty near, the *Marquis* went forth from our Ambuscade, and advancing towards his Mistress took her by the Hand, and saluting her, was going to lead her off ; when Madame *D'Aulnay* interposed, and asked, him, What Business he had with that Lady ? Upon which he retorted, A Business that God and Nature approves, not such a Business as you, Madam, once proposed to me. She swelled with Malice and Spite at this Answer, and ordered *Bellimante*, to go and alarm the Family, that they might prevent a Rape ; but our Friend led off his blooming Maid, blushing like the rosy
Morn,

Morn, and having put her into a Chariot, that stood ready, without any Pursuit or Opposition, we carried her to his Castle, where his Sister and other Ladies were assembled to receive her ; and from thence we attended them to *Evreux*, where a Priest tied the holy Knot, and made them one in Person, as they had long been in Soul. The next Day, he, attended by us, waited upon his Father-in-law, who at first gave him but a cold Reception ; but when he declared he expected no Fortune with her, and that he only hoped he'd do her Justice at his Death, he brightened up, and became so sociable, that he delivered all her Wearing Apparel, and promised, if they behaved dutifully to him, she should be treated by him like a Daughter at his Death.

C H A P. LVII.

They return to Paris.—A Proposal of Marriage is made to him.—Estampe's Behaviour thereon.—He asks him a particular Favour.—Is denied after importuning his Master to grant it.—A terrible Fire at the House of Du Plessis.—Goes to Serena's at her Desire.—Sees Estampe's Sister.—A most affecting Discovery.—Great Joy of Sharpley and the Family.

A Few Days after the Marquis's Nuptials were celebrated, we took Leave of that happy Couple, who parted with us with Reluctance, and returned to *Paris*, where, as soon as we arrived, I sent *Estampe* to find out *Sharpley*, and gave him Notice of it. He found him at *Serena's* and he came or rather flew to my Arms at the first Summons, expressing all the Joy his honest Heart felt at seeing me again ; and I, for my Part, experienced

perienced as much Joy in meeting that worthy Man, as I did when he informed me, that *Serena's* Mother had, at length, consented to gratify his and her Daughter's Inclination, in returning to her native Country, and making those two tender Lovers happy in each other ; and therefore *Sharpley* very pressingly importuned me to make our Stay in *France* as short as possible. I assured him I would soon resolve to set out for *England* ; but, tho' I longed, yet I dreaded to set Foot on that delightful Shore. As Sorrow increases by Comparison with others-Felicity, the Happiness I had been Witness to in the Marquis and his Lady, and that I now perceived in my Friend, recalled a Number of sad and doleful Ideas into my Mind, and I gave myself over to all the Pangs and Tortures that Despair indulged can inflict. In vain were the little Arts my *Estampe* put in Practice to chear me ; I saw all Nature happy, I thought, but myself ; and in the irrecoverable Loss of *Louisa*, I found all the Affliction that a human Breast could feel, and *Serena* and her *Mother* desiring my Company, at the same Time, added to my Unhappiness, by introducing me to the Countess *d'Elbeuf*, who had taken a Liking to my Person, and who desired them privately to let me know, that my Addresses to her would be so agreeable, that if I would marry her, she would settle the whole of her immense Fortune on me and my Heirs. She was young, handsome and rich, and the two Ladies used, or seemed to use, all their Art to bring me to pay her a Visit ; which I obstinately, notwithstanding, refused, and sternly told them, if the Subject was again insisted on, I must come to a Resolution never to see them more whilst they staid in *France* ; and, *Sharpley* joining his Intreaties

treaties to mine, I heard no more of the Proposal from that Quarter ; but I found *Eftampe* was set on continually to ring the Countess's Praises in my Ears, and, in an insinuating Way, to represent how hurtful my fruitless and unavailing Tears were for the Loss of my *Louisa*, and how much my repining was a Sin against Heaven : That I was in the Prime of Life, and owed a Duty to my Friends and Country, which I was, by my Resolution and Manner of Life, attempting to destroy. He fell at my Feet, and begged me to lay aside all Thoughts of my unfortunate Angel, and to embrace the enticing and glittering Prospects that were yielded to my Acceptance. I rose up in a Fury, and cried out, pushing him rudely from me, and art thou so little acquainted with my Temper, as to utter such Words before me ? Thou who bearest the Image of my adorable *Louisa*, and whom, in Respect to that, I have made my Companion and Bosom Friend ;—— begone from my Sight and never see me more ? No, I continued, shedding a Flood of Tears, never shall the generous Compact we made be broken, never will I forfeit my Vows of eternal Truth and Constancy, which Death and the Grave have not the Power to cancel ! Made before the awful Majesty of Heaven, in Heaven the sacred Tie shall be affirmed, and my *Louisa* shall be mine for ever ! This Ring, the sacred Pledge of my *Louisa's* Love ! This speaking Picture, that almost truly smiles, and soft approves my Constancy, shall ever hang upon this faithful Breast, and when the Damps of Death bedew my Face, the last Request, that e'er my faltering Tongue shall make, will be, May these be buried with me ! Methinks I see my radiant Maid, floating in the purest Fields of Light ! and——she gives a *Plaudit* to my Constancy.—Oh ! if I e'er could meet a
fair

fair one, that confessed thy wondrous matchless Charms; that shewed a Mind so excellent and so endowed with every Ornament and every Grace; it would then be some Excuse to be unfaithful;—but that's impossible, as 'tis impossible to bring thee back to Life.—No,—second Marriages are my Aversion.—I sure was married once,——and other Joys shall never reach me more! The poor Boy stood trembling during all these Exclamations, and the Tears even wetted the Place he was in; tho' I thought I perceived a Kind of Satisfaction in his Eyes, at the same Time, that was unaccountable to me. He knelt, and embracing my Knees, asked my Pardon for his Rashness, which proceeded purely from his Affection for me, and thro' Hopes of seeing me cured of a Grief that hung upon me so heavily; but, Sir, he went on, I'll never attempt your Indignation so far as I have done, the Remembrance of which makes me tremble; and will ever be a faithful Monitor to you of all my poor Lady's Perfections, for so I had instructed him to call her, of which you have given me such transporting Accounts. I raised him, and told him, I forgave him now; but, if the dearest Friend I had in the World, were to set about moving my unalterable Resolution of living and dying for ever my *Louisa's*, or encouraged such Discourse and such Proposals, I never would see him or speak to him again. *Estampe* turned up his Eyes to Heaven, in wondering Astonishment; and his Heart was so full, that he was obliged to quit the Room to ease the Burden of his sympathising Bosom. I declare, after this, I had not so much Regard to *Serena*, and her Mother, as I had before; nor could bear to go to the House, for which I framed such Excuses, as made it neither
look

look like Want of Affection to my Friend, or Disrespect to them.

One Day as I was fondly contemplating the Features of my *Louisa*, in the faithful Picture that had been my constant Companion thro' all my Difficulties and Dangers, *Eſtampe* told me, that his Sister was so near like that Portrait, that he was very sure I could not tell the Difference between his Lady and her, if I was to see her. This led me to ask a Number of Questions about her, and to enquire, How it came she had never yet been to see him since his being in my Service? He answered me, that she had by the Recommendation of *Serena* been introduced to the Dutcheſs *de Chartres*, and that she had taken such a Fancy to her, as to admit her at first to attend about her Person, and that since, her Affection encreasing by a View of her good Qualities, she had made her her Companion and Confidant, and was so fond of her, that it was seldom she could suffer her out of her Sight; and that she very rarely visited even *Serena*, or her Mother; where he had an Opportunity twice of seeing her, since he had the Honour of being with me; but that, by Appointment with those Ladies, she was to wait upon them in a Day or two, and he wished I would suffer him to enquire the particular Time of her Coming, and make myself an accidental Guest to satisfy myself, that what he had said of her Resemblance to his Lady was just. Indeed, Sir, I won't compliment her, he continued, but she is so near a Copy of that Excellence you weep the Loss of, that I don't doubt but the Sight of her will give you Pleasure, and perhaps may contribute to chase away for some Moments, the Chagrine and Despair that perpetually haunts your Mind.

I was

I was pleased to see the Zeal of this worthy Lad, who was continually proposing somewhat or other to divert my Attention from the Subject of my Sorrows ; but this Visit I absolutely refused to comply with, telling him, I suffered Mortification enough in daily seeing his Features, which had so near a Resemblance of *Louisa*, and that I could not, I was sure, be able to support myself in seeing before me so living a Picture of the Woman I loved, which would, no doubt, rob me of my Senses entirely, and drive me to Distraction. He urged me notwithstanding, again and again, with such Earnestness, that he surprised me, and even begged upon his Knees, that I would gratify him by seeing his Sister, and was sure it would be productive of more Good to me than I could possibly be aware of. I took him up very short, and told him, his talking in that Manner to me was such a Riddle, that I could not understand it, and threatened him, that if I ever found him capable of carrying on, or supposing he could execute any cunning Scheme upon me, that was prejudicial to my Honour and the Resolutions I had taken, I was certain I should very difficultly refrain from using him as he deserved, and turning him out of my Service. Look ye, I added, when once a Servant thinks he can be too cunning for his Master, he never stops at small Crimes, but carries his Designs on till they end in his own Detriment and Ruin ; and therefore to preserve my good Opinion, I must never know you capable of any Thing of the Sort, even where you should think it was for my Peace, Quiet or Interest. Poor *Eslampe* was grievously shocked at what I said, and was going to reply, when *Sharpley* came in, and brought his *Serena* with him to pay me a Visit. I received them with my usual Gladness, and after some other

other Matters talked over, *Serena* told me, that she had a great Favour to beg of me, which was, that I would come and dine with them the next Day ; to which I gave my Assent, on Condition there was no other Company than themselves, and her Mother ; she freely owned, there would be an *English* Lady there, that she wanted to introduce to my Knowledge and Acquaintance, who had met with as great Misfortunes in Love as myself, and had come to the same Resolution never to think of Marriage again. Indeed, Mr. *Thompson*, she added, you will find her far from being a disagreeable Lady ; nor will she force you, like our tittle-tattle Sex, to talk more than you care for : Come, my dear Friend's Friend, clapping one of her pretty Hands upon my Shoulder, you shall not refuse me this Favour, which I assure you, shall be the only one of the Kind I'll ever ask again till you give me Leave : I could not longer resist this agreeable Creature, and the joint Endeavours of my Friend, who enforced what his *Serena* said, as much as he possibly could. When they departed, *Eftampe* told me, he was glad they had got my Promise to go, as he was sure it would divert my Melancholy, for latterly I had seen no Company at all ; and, Sir, says he, but I am afraid to mention it again, that *English* Lady, Miss *Serena* mentioned, is the very Sister I spoke of to you, to whom they jocosely give that Title, and who has been as unfortunate as yourself. I started at this, but it was too late to go back, tho' it put me out of Humour, for I thought I saw the Heads of a Contrivance in it, that I could not fathom. My Visit had like to have been baulked, however, the same Night by a dreadful Fire that broke out at the House of *Du Plessis*, and raged in a terrible manner ; and the City of *Paris* not being provided with so convenient *Aqueducts* as we have in *London*, it did a great deal

deal of Damage before it was extinguished. My Concerns were of so small a Bulk, that they were soon removed ; but poor *Du Pleſſis* suffered greatly, which infinitely concerned both *Sharpley* and me, who resolved in some Measure to assist him to recover his Loss. It began between Eleven and Twelve at Night ; we were all in Bed, and myself in a most profound Sleep, when the Flames had taken hold of the very Stair-case that led to my Apartment, that of *Eſtampe*'s and some others. The first News I had of the Danger was from that Page, who ran trembling to my Bed-side, and begged me for Heaven's Sake to awake and rise, or I should be burnt in my Bed : He had Time to dress himself, and soon secured what belonged to us ; but by that Time I had slipped on my Clothes, the Flames had seized the Chamber-door, so that we were forced to tie the Sheets together, and it being but one Story from the Ground, tho' a pretty lofty one, I ordered *Eſtampe* first to descend, which he refused to do ; so, not to waste Time in Dispute, I got down safely first, and he as safely followed me. The Family of *Du Pleſſis*, and myself and Servants, were invited by Count *Garonne*, whose House was opposite, to make use of the Conveniences it afforded us till we could better provide ourselves ; which we did accordingly, for it was impossible to refuse so polite an Invitation : As to Mr. *Sharpley*, he had left *Du Pleſſis*, and had taken Lodgings hard by *St. Clou*, where he could be nearer his *Serena* ; so that he suffered nothing by the Misfortune, nor heard of it till next Morning, when he came to condole with us on the Accident, and was quite delighted to hear that not one Person was hurt, but that we all escaped the Flames without the least Detriment. Poor *Eſtampe*, as he was attending me whilst I dressed, said, Now, Sir, this puts me in Mind of the

the Service you was of to my poor Lady, when you saved her from the Fire at her Father's ; and, tho' I barely resemble her, yet I have had the Happiness in her Person, as you are pleased sometimes to call it, to retaliate the Kindness you did her. I sighed, and told him, I would never forget the Office of Love he had performed, which still encreased his Value in my Opinion.

When we were dressed, I walked to *St. Clou* alone, for *Estantpe* had begged to be excused going with me, the last Night's Surprize having so affected him, that he was greatly disordered in his Head. I was received by my three Friends, with the gladdest Testimonies of Affection, and, before Dinner, we entertained ourselves in the Garden, and in a Library, full of the best and politest Authors, which gave me an high Opinion of the refined Taste of these Ladies, and their good Sense ; and, in short, every Action of *Serena's* made me approve my Friend's Choice.

Dinner being ready, we went into a Summer-house, where the Table was spread in an elegant Manner, and the Mother and Daughter both excused the Lady's not coming, they had mentioned ; who had sent Word, she could not make one of the Company till after Dinner, when she would be sure to attend us. I could not help perceiving by the Looks of *Madame Rich*, that somewhat more than ordinary was in Agitation ; and when Dinner was over, and they withdrawn for some Moments, I told Mr. *Sharpley* so, who said, that he had made the same Observation, but was totally ignorant of the Meaning of it. They came in again, and seating themselves, in about a Quarter of an Hour afterwards, Word was brought, that a Coach had stopped at the Gate ; on which Advice the old Lady got up, and went to receive her Guest, as she supposed it to be, and soon returned with her : As she entered the
Room,

Room, and saluted the Company, I, tho' I hardly encountered her with my Eyes, perceived she was prodigiously genteel, and of a middle Stature. She complained of being troubled with the Tooth-ach, and, on that Account, held an Handkerchief to her Face, which concealed the lower Part from View; but, by what I saw of her, upon a closer Attention, she was a very charming Woman, and recalled much of my *Louisa* already into my Mind. We sat some Time talking of indifferent Matters, but the Lady suddenly dropping her Fan, and I sitting opposite to her, ran to take it up, and presenting it to her, looked full in her Face; but, oh! Angels, and all the blessed Host of Heaven! had an Apoplexy darted thro' my Brain; had a Thunderbolt, red from the flashing Sky, transfixed me, had, instant, the last Day been proclaimed, and the Graves given up their Dead in my Sight, my Affright and Terror had been not much more!

*A sudden Horror seiz'd my giddy Head,
And my Ears tinkled, and my Colour fled:
Nature was in Alarm.——*

To my Sight was revealed the Form all beauteous as it was of the dead *Louisa*; who, smiling, took the Fan, and bowed her Head.—I fell, and uttering a hollow Groan, lost all my Senses at once in a Swoon! It was, I afterwards found, a long Time before I came at all to myself; and when I did, my Words were so incoherent and disjointed, that it was feared I had totally lost my Understanding; and I was put to Bed in a high Fever, raving, and calling upon my *Louisa*! dear lovely *Louisa*! whom still my Eyes perceived, shedding Tears by my Bedside; when I exclaimed, Oh! Mockery of Woe! whence, oh! am I thus tortured, thus abused, with Images and Fancies of
what

what is not in Being ? The lovely Phantom, inclining her Cheek to mine, and wetting it with kindly Dew, cried out, my Dear, my long lost Dear ! how I accuse myself for rashly putting you into this strange Delirium, by presenting your *Louisa* before you, in so unguarded a Manner ? but yet, behold 'tis she, 'tis she herself, preserved yet to be happy with her *Thompson*, her dear lamented *Thompson*, whose Death she long has mourned, with Sighs and Tears of bitter, cruel Anguish. See that I tell thee Truth, and, softly laying her balmy Lips to mine, said, Don't you know *Elsampe* in your *Louisa* ? The Touch reviving, brought me to myself, tho' still wondering Amazement, made me gaze around, as if I doubted of my own Existence : At length, I folded round the slender Waist, my longing Arms, and snatched her to my Bosom, imprinting Kisses on her blushing Cheeks, that glowed with Warmth and Love. This, this, I cried, repays my every Pang, and all the numerous Ills thy Loss has caused me, thou excellentest and thou sweetest Fair ! whose Death was Death to me ; for since I have not lived, but walked and stalked about, forlorn, and most unhappy ! Oh, gracious God ! *our present Joy makes our past Miseries Sport* ? But where, or how, or when was thou preserved to bless my longing Sight ? 'Tis all a Miracle,——'tis wondering Frenzy of fierce intensest Love. All, all, my *Thompson*, she replied, thou shalt know, and how, for many Years deploring thy sad Loss, I have lived obscure in this beloved Place ; beloved, since again it gives me you ; but let us cease and calm our frantic Souls ; repose thyself whilst I retire and strive to be composed. I would not, could not part with her, and she kindly consented to stay by my Bed-side till I had tried so to come to myself,

self, as to be able to rise, and be fit for Conversation. I fell at length, into a sweet Slumber, that held me near an Hour, and, waking, looked about earnestly for the Charmer of my Heart, whom I saw sitting beside me, and watching my Return to Reason :

—————fairer to be seen,
 Than the fair Lilly on the flowery Green ;
 More fresh than May herself, in Blossoms new.—

Seeing me awake, she gently pressed my Hand, and asked me, if I thought I could rise ? which answering in the Affirmative, she withdrew, and I arose, and went down into the Parlour, where I found my Charmer, and my other Friends, who congratulated me on my Happiness ; and *Sharpley*, clasping me in his Arms, protested he wanted nothing to make him completely blessed ; but pray, Madam, says he, turning to *Serena*, How could you be so cruel to conceal this Secret from me ? Why might not I have had a Share in this Plot ? No, no, Sir, replies the good old Lady, we know your Attachment too well to your Friend, to think it possible for you to conceal any Thing from him, and therefore we resolved to keep it to ourselves : He advanced to my *Louisa*, and, saluting her with great Politeness, and that Awe her Presence always inspired, told her, had he known her before, he should have recommended Miss *Rich*, his Countrywoman, to another Place with his Friend than that of a Page ? To which she replied, that she should always be delighted to serve her old Master, in that Capacity or any one else that would give him greater Pleasure. I bowed, and told her, she should always command me, for I had been too long at my own Hands, not to see that I wanted Government. Well, Niece, says her Aunt,

Aunt, you are now sure of your Lover's Constancy, which you was resolved to try to the utmost, and I believe he is not now sorry, that he has seen *Estampe's* Sister. The old Lady whose good Nature and good Sense I admired, and her amiable Daughter, were never tired of caressing us both, and we past the Remainder of the Day in the utmost Gladness and Festivity; the Servants had their Share in the Rejoicing for this good News, and as to my Part, if I have any Idea of the future Joys of Heaven, it flowed from the true and genuine Satisfaction I enjoyed in my Recovered Angel's soft Society, whose Pleasure seemed, and was as great as mine. Decency requiring us to part, I went with *Sharpley* to his Lodging, after taking Leave of my Soul's Treasure with the utmost Reluctance.

C H A P. LVIII.

The Adventures of Miss LOUISA RICH.

AS soon as the Morning dawn'd, my Friend and I arose; Lovers like us were not much given to Sleep; we had enough of Tenderness and boundless Affection to employ us most Part of the Night, in Conversation of our Happiness; and the Idea of being so nearly related to each other gave us a Pleasure, that could only be felt by us, who understood and practised all the Delicacies of Friendship. We hugged one another, and mutually spoke Congratulation to ourselves, and Praises to our Mistresses. For my Part I felt no such Dullness and Melancholy, as for so many hundred Mornings had afflicted my Soul; but was all over the gay, easy, free *Joe Thompson*, that I had been before

my Misfortunes. Hence ! hence ! I cried, all Sadness, all Despair, since my *Louisa* is again revived, and shall at last be mine !

We found the Ladies were not risen when we waited upon them, and went into the Garden to recreate ourselves till they came down to us, which they soon did, and all around them,

Spread fragrant Odours, spread ambrosial Sweets !

We breakfasted, amidst all the felicitous Raptures their Presence inspired, and then to encourage my *Louisa*, to relate her miraculous, for so I could not help calling it, Escape from *England*, and the Jaws of Death, I told all that had befallen me since the Moment, the fatal Moment of our Separation, till the present happy Hour. They all lifted up their Eyes at the vile Actions of the Squire, on whom they could not help calling down Punishment for his Crimes. My amiable Maid, now reddened, now turned pale at the various Misfortunes that had befallen me, and often was ready to sink at the Narration of the grievous Ills I had suffered ; and the Story of my Grief and perpetual Despair for her Loss, drew Tears from all my four Auditors, who sweetly, gently, sympathised in my Woes. The Presence of the dear Creature, who was the principal Cause of all, gave me so much Spirits in my Relation, that I seemed inspired, and painted all I said so strongly, that I, myself, even wept at the doleful Tale. And now, I cried, as soon I had concluded, thou Joy of my Heart, oblige me with thy Adventures, which I think must have been as extraordinary as my own ; and let me know how you resolved to counterfeit Death, and the Motives for all your Proceedings since. Blushing, she began, and thus recounted what I had desired.

I hope

I hope I shall be excused, when I say that it is impossible for me to describe so touchingly what I have undergone, as my dear *Thompson* has ; for Women, tho' perhaps their Souls are softer far than Men's, have not so much the Power of Eloquence and nervous Fire, to shine in descriptive Tale. They feel most sensibly, but can't relate the Motions of their Breasts so well ; not used to Misfortune, not expecting it, it hurries their Spirits to such a Degree when it comes upon them, that they lose the Power of Expression in the Fullness of their Minds. Much more now than I am worthy of Excuse, when I can hardly call what I have suffered Ills at this Moment, when the Presence of that Gentleman has so rejoiced my Heart, that, whilst I look on him, I forget, in Extremity of Satisfaction, every torturing Incident of the many Years I have mourned.

No one sure can imagine the Grief it occasioned me, to lose my faithful and trusty *Fidèle* in the Manner I so suddenly did ; but my Pain was still encreased, when my Father came into my Chamber foaming with Rage, and after the most irritated Language that he could use, in which he hardly kept his Hands from executing the Punishment he said I deserved for my Disobedience and silly Love, as he called it ; he locked me in, took the Key in his Pocket, and told me at his Departure, he would remove me far from the Wretch I had chosen to place my Affection upon ; and, accordingly, some Time afterwards, having armed his Servants and ordered a Coach and Six to the Gate, I was carried, or rather dragged into it, by himself and the Villain *my* Cousin, having had but just Time to get one of the Servants that loved me, and had been obliged to me for preserving him in his Place, to carry you the little Note you have mentiond in your Sto-

ry. This I wrote to prevent to those Sallies of Passion that I knew would assault you, when you could not learn what was become of me, and to make you easy as to the Continuance of my Affection. I knew not, but by some Words my Cousin had dropped, unawares to my Father, in my Presence, where I was going to be hurried : There was no one in the Coach but myself, and I was senseless to every Thing but the distracted Ideas that oppressed my Brain ; whilst it was drove at a prodigious Rate, lest you should get Notice of the Way we had taken and pursue us ; for my Father often said to the Squire, the Dog is brave, and he and young *Diaper*, his Friend, would stick at nothing to serve each other ; and as I don't care for Murder, let's keep our Rout as secret as possible, for they'll be so desperate, that we must sacrifice them if they offer to follow us. The Squire recollecting when we had got some Miles, that somewhat or other was forgot in the Hurry, was sent back with two Servants ; for he refused to go alone, as I afterwards heard, for fear of meeting you, and for which I heard Sir *Walter* called him a snivelling, pitiful Dog ; so that I continued under my Father's Convoy, and hoped when we came to the Stage we were to bait at, that I should be able to soften and mollify his Temper in the Absence of that Incendiary, the Bane to all my Happiness. We put up, late at Night, at a large Inn in a noted Town, where we found pretty good Accommodations ; and when Supper was brought in, and we had eat what we had an Inclination to, my Father called for Tobacco, and in a surly Way told me, I must give him my Company, and must not go to Bed till he did : I informed him, as tenderly as I could, that his Company was more desirable than any other, and my Behaviour

Behaviour might inform him, that I never was better pleased than when he did me the Honour to bestow it upon me : Says thou so, *Lucy*, he replied, give me a Buss for that Speech ; I could forgive every Thing if you'd forget your *Linen-dra- per*, and agree to my Sentiments. I ran to him, threw my Arms round his Neck, and with Tears in my Eyes, told him, I must own, I perceived so many good Qualities in Mr. *Thompson*, that I could not help being moved by them, but, dear Papa, what need is there of any Restraint upon me ? My Sincerity is justified by my not conceal- ing my Affection to him from you, and I promised you, and you know, Sir, Promises are sacred with your little *Lucy*, that I would never think of him any otherwise than as a Friend and Acquain- tance, unless you gave your Consent to it : Why then, Sir, must I be hurried from you, at such a Distance from my dear Father, whose only Solace and Comfort I used to be, merely for liking a Man, he has himself so much esteemed, and introduced to my Favour and Acquaintance ? Have you not, dearest Sir, said yourself, he was the only Man you should like for me if he had a Fortune suffi- cient, and that you wished he was a Son of yours, and one of better Birth ? Ah, Sir ! his Descent is known to you to be almost equal to your own ; but, setting that aside, and supposing him to be beneath my Choice in Birth, yet let me repeat some Lines to you, you have often desired me to read, and applauded :

— Search we the secret Springs,
And backward trace the Principles of Things ;
There shall we find, that when the World began,
One common Mass composed the Mould of Man ;
One Paste of Flesh on all Degrees bestow'd,
And kneaded up alike with moist'ning Blood.

*The same almighty Pow'r inspir'd the Frame
 With kindled Life, and form'd the Souls the same:
 The Faculties of Intellect and Will,
 Dispens'd with equal Hand, dispos'd with equal*

*Skill,
 Like Liberty indulg'd, with Choice of Good or*

*Ill:
 Thus born alike, from Virtue first began
 The Diff'rence that distinguish'd Man from Man:
 He claim'd not Title from Descent of Blood,
 But that which made him noble, made him good;
 Warm'd with more Particles of heavenly Fame,
 He wing'd his upward Flight, and soar'd to*

*Fame;
 The rest remain'd below, a Tribe without a*

Then, dear Pappa, tell how I have offended you in being of the same Sentiments with yourself, and acknowledging that Merit which you first taught me to see and admire; besides, Sir, you say, or always have said, that an ungrateful Person is a Monster: Oh! how often—you can tell;—the generous Youth has saved my Life when in the utmost Peril; and can I, Sir, can I, my Father, be insensible of the Favour of *Being*, that he has preserved to me? My Father wiped his Eyes, and after some Pause broke out thus, G—d Z—ds, and so, I have brought you up to know more than the Father that begot thee: What, dost tell me of a new-fangled Tale, of this and that, that I, nor any Body else can understand the Meaning of, of Merit and Gratitude, and the rest, at this Time? Yes, I have told thee, it was good to be grateful; but did I ever think thou wouldst plead his own Works against thy Father? I respect old *Thompson* and his Wife well enough, and did like the

the Boy, I must own, till he manifested a Design upon my Daughter. You know I intended you from your Birth for your Cousin, and ha' him you shall : G—d's Blood, dost thou think so many a Thousand a Year was intended for a Parson's Son, and a *London* Tradesman ? No, no, if he had offered to court your Maid I'd given my Consent, and somewhat beside may hap ; tho' I wish that *Numps* knew as much as he too, it would be better for him ? and you know *Joe* is an *Heretic*, and of an *Heretic* Family ; but, however, to be sure he's as good as us, no doubt ; I don't believe he'll be damned neither, and the Dog tosses off his Bottle as well as any Man. Here I interrupted him, Pappa, if he has not a great Fortune now, with your Assistance he may have one ; and a Man that can improve an Estate like him, is a far better Match than one that has not Wit enough to keep what he has : Hussy, hold your Tongue, he replied, my Resolution is fixed, you shall have your Cousin or No-body : Z—ds, if I had had Sense enough, I should have cut off your Paramour's Ears, but those he keeps to lose in the Pillory, for Lyes spoken behind his Compter. I said no more, after this odd, incoherent Harangue, and he fell asleep, and snored so loud, that an House-dog, who lay under the Table, suddenly made at him, and bit him by the Heel ; at which he awaked, and looking about, saw me sitting weeping, and asked me, What ailed me ? Indeed, Sir, I replied, I am not used to sit up these Hours, and it frightens me, for Fear either my dear Father, or myself, should get sick upon it. Thou'rt a good Girl, Faith, and I ask thee Pardon, he said, and ringing for the Hostess, who had sat up merely through Complaisance, ordered her to shew me to Bed, and went immediately after to Bed himself.

I was in Hopes what I had said would have altered his way of Thinking ; for I added a great deal more than I can at present remember ; and indeed the next Morning at Breakfast, he behaved with so much Affection, that my Thoughts, I imagined, had proved true ; but just after we had sat down, my Cousin came in, and glancing a malicious Look at me, in which Joy was very visible, that is, not the pure Joy that animates an honest Face upon any happy Incident, but such a malign Kind of Satisfaction that the bad Part of the World experience, when they have served a particular Turn of their own, and which is distinguished from the other by their very Countenances) called my Father aside, at which Time I suppose he related his Rencontre with you, which you have so mournfully, and to me painfully described ; for the old Gentleman returned, with new Fury painted in his Visage, and without saying a Word to me, ordered the Horses into the Coach ; into which entering, we pursued our Journey, and in three Days more arrived at this Lady's at the *Grange* in *Somersetshire*. My Aunt, who has a fine Estate there, had been often in my dear Mother's Time, at our House and her amiable Daughter, my dear *Serena*, was partly brought up with me under my Mother's Care. I need not describe them, the Sequel of my Story will inform you of their noble and generous Turn of Mind ; and as to their Persons, it would be Vanity and Impertinence in me to attempt to draw their Pictures. My Father apprehended, that my Aunt would have immediately fallen into his Sentiments ; and, indeed, she was much prejudiced against me when she first heard his Story, and agreed to a Vote he put, that I should be confined to my Chamber till my Temper was altered ; but how surprized was the dear
good

good Woman, when she, attempting to call me to Account for my Folly, heard the real Truth of the Affair, and that Mr. *Thompson* was not a Vagabond, a Rascal, a designing Villain, but a Gentleman in every Respect formed to gratify the Taste of a Woman of good Sense and Virtue? At another Time she may tell you, no doubt, in what a spirited and affectionate Manner I talked of you; it would not become me at present to repeat all I said in your Praise, and on your Behalf; let it suffice that with this young Lady's Assistance, I melted her so, that the next Morning, she persuaded my Father to let me be at large under her Inspection, for that she would answer for my Conduct. I was pestered all this while with the nauseous Visits of the Squire, who in his awkward Way, addressed me, and bespoke my Good-will; but I returned him no other Answer, than Silence gave; and once, when he particularly teased and pestered me, I told him, I would sooner pierce my Heart with a Dagger, than ever think of marrying such a Monster of Revenge and Cruelty. He left me abruptly upon this, and forbore his Visits for some Days; he and my Father being at that Time, at Sir *William Careless's*, a Seat about two Miles from that of my Aunt, and in this Interval, a Servant I could depend upon, being sent about some Business in *Yorkshire*, I put into his Custody a Letter for you, which I am glad to hear you safely received. Ah! Mr. *Thompson*, my Fears at this Time were much greater on your Account than my own: I knew your sanguine resolute Temper, and was shocked at the Thought of the Desperation my Loss would occasion in you, in your noble Spirit, which can never submit to an Injury with that Moderation, that perhaps is as commendable as necessary; and I framed that Letter on

Purpose to calm the Tumults of your Soul Mean Time, I underwent all that the foolish Officiousness of my Father, the hateful Addressee of the Squire, and my own gloomy Ideas could inflict. Let me own my Love to you was as intense as it was pure and holy : I lamented your Absence, and the Distance that divided us, and ruminated upon the Accidents that might prove fatal to our Loves, with such perpetual Sighings and Tears, such frantic Sorrow, that my Aunt and Cousin, nay, even my Father was alarmed, lest I should throw myself into a Fever, and the Villain, our Persecutor, was forbid for some Time to approach me : By this Time these two Ladies had entertained such a Love and Esteem for me, which all my Life will never be able to make them Amends for, that they sincerely resolved to befriend me in all my Desires, and, if possible, to ease me of the Persecutions that surrounded me : They talked all they could to suggest to my Father, but found him as firm and steady as a Rock in his Purposes, that I should renounce you for ever and wed the Squire. I did promise, said he, never to force her Inclinations, provided she would not correspond, or have any Thing more to say to young *Thompson* ; but she broke thro' her Contract, and I have now a Discharge for every Thing I attempt to make her happy,—even against her Will : Nor shall she much longer dally with me, if I drag her to Church, and give her Hand into my Nephew's by Force. These Ladies, as well as myself, knew the resolute, obstinate Temper of my Father ; and his Behaviour so irritated me, that tho' I had promised never to marry without his Consent, yet I believe had you been upon the Spot, I should have made my Escape to you, or done any Thing

to

to be freed from his Tyranny. Amongst the great Number of Visitors that resorted to see my Aunt, was Col. *Williams*, a Gentleman of a very large Estate, who, at first Sight, expressed a very great Value for me, and asked Leave of her to pay his Addressee to me. He was as polite and generous as he was rich; and when my Aunt told him of my Pre-engagement, he desisted; but when she informed him also of the Hardships I laboured under on account of the Squire, whom by this Time all the Gentry in the Neighbourhood esteemed a very Booby, he proposed, with my Leave, to appear publickly as his Rival, that by producing some Act of Villainy and Baseness from him, my Father might be forced to alter his Purposes. I consented;—he made Parties of Pleasure for us, —professed himself my Admirer, and went so far as to ask my Father's Consent to marry me; which, tho' he genteelly declined, yet his Vanity was too much humoured in seeing his Daughter the 'Toast of the County to forbid his Visits, and my Aunt put on an Air of Satisfaction at what he did. The Squire, who was soon apprized of this potent Rival, complained of it to my Father, and of the Encouragement he had received; but he gave him this Answer, Z—nds, why, if hast not Spirit enough to defend thy Claim against all the World, thou art not worthy of her. He took this so much in Dudgeon, that he came to my Aunt's, where he found the Colonel and myself playing a Game at *Piquet*, whilst my Cousin was looking on, in a Summer-house in the Garden: As soon as he came in, he sat down without saying a Word, or pulling his Hat off; upon which the Colonel laughing, said, Ladies, I have so much Veneration for your Sex, that I think a Man who has Assurance enough to come into your Presence without taking off his Hat, ought to have it nailed to his

his Head, as the Czar of *Muscovy* once did that of a certain Ambassador. By G—d, returns the Squire, you can't nail it there : Not in the Presence of these Ladies, he rejoin'd, but if you are very impertinent, I'll take you out and correct you for it. The natural Cowardice of this Villain made him preserve Silence some Minutes ; but at length he broke out, Sir, What Business have you with that Lady ? No other at present, says the Colonel, than to protect her from your Rudeness and Brutality ; and so, pray, Sir, don't watch our Actions, but be gone directly, or I shall be forced to use you as you deserve ! He did not stir, and the Colonel, still laughing, got up and gave him three or four Strokes over the Shoulder with an Hazel-twigg, and hauled him out of the Summer-house by the Collar ; and the great Oaf, with his Long-sword by his Side, stole away into the House to our inexpressible Diversion. To go further yet, the Colonel paid a Visit to my Father at Sir *William's*, to complain in Form of his Rudeness, and to tell him, that he would use him just so, whenever he was impertinent again in any Place he chose to be in. My Father at first was very angry with the Colonel, but soon came into a better Temper, and cried, Ay, do Colonel, I wish you could raise his Passion so much as to get him to fight ; well, he's a worthy Lad too, but we are not all born with Courage. My Aunt and Cousin rallied him so far for his Cowardice, together with his Uncle, that he thought he was obliged according to his Notions of Honour to kill him, and for that Purpose, way-laid him in a By-path, and fired a Pistol at him, the Ball grazing on the Crown of his Hat. The Colonel started, and turning about, drew his Sword and pursued his Antagonist, whom he soon came up with, and
was

was quite astonished to find it was the noble Squire *Rich*. In the first Motions of his Resentment, he was going to run his Sword thro' him ; but considering the Worthlessness of the Object, thought it was better to expose him to Shame ; so tying his Hands behind him, he made him march before him to my Aunt's, where he ushered him in, and told the Story of the intended Assassination. Never Creature sure looked so meanly as the Wretch did at this Time, and when my Father was sent for, he was ready to expire with Shame at the Reproaches that were made him. The Colonel left him bound, saying, Sir, in Consideration of you and your Family I will not expose this Villain to publick Punishment ; only consider wisely, whether a Man of this Stamp is a fit Husband for your charming Daughter. My Aunt protested to my Father, that he should never enter her Doors again ; and the old Gentleman took him Home with him, giving him an angry Kick on the Breech, as he went out at the Door. Would you believe it, this Fellow had Assurance enough to tell my Father, and made him believe it too, that he was walking out, and for Diversi-
on, fired his Pistol at a Mark, not knowing the Colonel, or any Body else, was passing that Way, and promised him, that to retrieve his Reputation, he would call him to a Gentleman-like Account, for the Calumnies with which he had loaded him, and that the Reason of his Silence, under the Charge against him, was the Presence of himself and me, and the Consideration of the apparent Circumstances, which, to be sure, were greatly in his Disfavour. All this he uttered with so many Sighs and Tears, and Protestations of his Innocence, that my Father, blindly fond of him, credited all he said ; and only required, that, as a
Proof

Proof of his Innocence, he would challenge the Colonel; and, if you don't do that, says he, to be sure you can never have *Louisa*. He introduced him again to my Aunt's, with this strange Story, which, tho' none of us believed, we agreed to his Visits, knowing he would soon ruin his Scheme by his Fear of challenging the Colonel; which we imagined he would as soon attempt to do, as to face an Army of 10,000 Men; but, this Time, his Credit was preserved with my Father, by the Colonel's being ordered, the next Day, to his Duty in *London*, to which Place he set out, after taking a genteel Farewel of us, with a Promise to return, and try the Squire's Courage in less than a Fortnight. But this dreadful Fortnight gave me more Pangs than Tongue can describe, and was the Source of a Resolution that brought me to this Country; and, now let me say, to all the Happiness I could propose in Life.

The Squire, after the Colonel's Departure, blustered, and strutted about, like the famous *Bully* of Mr. *Congreve*, and then disappeared, all on a Sudden; giving out, That since one Victim had fled, he was resolved to take Satisfaction of another, who had used him as ill as this *Prig*, by daring to rival him in my Affections. He was gone near a Week, when my Father, with a Mixture of Joy and Concern in his Countenance, brought a Letter to shew my Aunt, saying, Z—ds, I am sorry for the poor Lad's Fate too; but *Numps* has, at last, shewn himself a Man of Courage; and I'd have Col. *Williams* stand clear, when he comes back. The Letter was:

Honur'd SUR,

Honor'd SUR,

I Hope youe wil not now blive the many bafes Stories thate are fo conftanteley tolde youe of me ; for I have givene a goode Accounte of younge *Tomfin*, whome, in a Duell, I made a Sackrifice off, and bite the Grounde. I have got fafe here, frome the Purfut made after mee ; and now hes removde, I hope I fhall meete with no further Muleftetion, in aboute havinge, Cufen *Louifee*. The poore Felowe was juft fettinge out for *London*.

Your dutifull Nefew, tell Dctb,

*Boston,
Lincolnshire.*

HUMPHRY RICHE.

My Aunt read this Letter with the utmoft Astonifhment ; and, tho' ſhe did not believe he had killed you in a Duel, yet ſhe did not doubt but he had, in the bafe Way of Affaffination, taken away your Life. She took my Father afide, and begged him not to let me know the Affair abruptly, but truſt to her Care cautiously to diſcover it, and let her have the Letter for that Purpoſe ; and, the next Morning, taking me into her Chamber, ſhe called in her Daughter ; and, ſhutting the Door, began to open the Matter to me thus : My deareſt Niece, to me Miſfortunes are no Strangers ; I have lived long enough to look upon every Thing below as vain and tranſitory, and all our fancied Enjoyments as only ſo many Incentives to get acquainted with Miſery. The Pleaſures we reap here cannot compenſate for the Pains we endure ; we are daily, hourly, ſeeking after Toys and Bubbles, and neglect the more important Concerns of a future State. You yourſelf, young as you are, have felt ſome Trouble : The Loſs of your dear Mother, tho' you was then almoſt

most an Infant, caused in you a sincere Grief, which I know you was sensibly afflicted with; but, perhaps, somewhat that will more nearly affect you has happened; a fatal Accident, that, if you are not armed with Religion and Reason sufficient to bear, may, perhaps, kill your Peace of Mind for ever!—Here, all wild and frantic, yet unsuspecting the Reason for this Discourse, I cried, Oh! Madam, What has happened?—My Father!—Is he killed?—Is he dead?—Alas! What shall I do?—I am sorry I ever disobeyed him.—No, no, my Dear, calm yourself,—your Father is alive and well;—perhaps he does not so much deserve this dutiful Concern;—No, 'tis not for his Loss you are to mourn:—But—here a Shower of Tears stopped her farther Utterance,—and she tenderly clasped me in her Arms, whilst her Daughter and myself joined our Tears, unknowing the Occasion, with her's.—She came to herself, and went on—the best of Y^{ou}ths, my Dear,—don't look so wildly; the best of Y^{ou}ths, as you have described him,—is dead!—is murdered by a Villain!—your dear *Thompson*! Oh! God, I cried, and fell from my Chair, in so stupid a Swoon, that my Head received a violent Contusion, which, see, I carry the Marks of to this Day. They were both so alarmed at this Accident, that they were near being in the same Condition: They both loved me tenderly, as I did, and ever shall do, them: What could they say?—What could they do?—They raised me, rubbed my Temples with *Hungary-Waier*, and other such reviving Preparations; but, for a full Hour, could not bring me to the least Sense or Motion. At length I awoke from this death like-Trance; and the first Idea that presented itself to my Imagination, was my
dearest

dearest *Thompson*, all wan and pale, his Blood issuing out at several Wounds, and his Hair clotted with Gore ! Oh ! I cried,—let me die with thee ! I have no Business now in Life ;—Where shall I meet thee, thou dreadful, well-known Form ? —Oh ! let me hide thee in my Arms, and wipe off the sanguine Streams that deform thy Visage, — and then fainted away again ; and, Assistance being called, I was put to Bed in an high Fever ; and was for some Days so delirious, that it was thought I should never get over it. My dear Aunt and Cousin were inconsolable ; and my Father, notwithstanding his obdurate Temper, was sincerely grieved ; but the two Ladies would not suffer him to approach me, and loaded him with the Epithets, of Cruel, — Base, — and Barbarous ; and told him he had murdered one Person, and now, they supposed, would send his Emissary, to kill the other. His Nephew was arrived, and put on the Air of a great deal of Concern ; but my Aunt sent him Word, if he approached the House, she would order her Servants to secure him as a Murderer. In about three Weeks I was somewhat upon the mending Hand, but recovered slowly, and with such a Worm at my Breast, as deprived me of all Comfort. My Colour vanished from my Cheeks ; —I grew as pale as a Spectre, and my Body so thin and emaciated, that I was hardly known to be the same ; However, I had Resolution enough to desire my Aunt to let me into the Particulars of my *Thompson's* Fate, and had seriously entered into the gloomy Resolution to make away with myself, the first Opportunity. Oh ! let a Person be ever so wise or intelligent, there are some Misfortunes so severe, that it is impossible for them to bear up against their Force ; the Brain, and all the Faculties weakened,

weakened, admit of the most direful Resolves; and, perhaps, none but thinking Persons can be so much affected. *A Fool has not Sense enough to grieve*, is as true a Saying, as it is a trite one. I agreed with her, that you must have been basely murdered, tho' I could not account for your having staid so long in *Yorkshire*; and for a great while, I formed many Schemes to bring your Murderer to Justice; but the unlucky Thought, that, perhaps, my Father was concerned in it, stopped me in my intended Prosecution, which otherwise my Aunt, notwithstanding the Squire's near Relation, would have joined in. I was no sooner up, than my Father, very abruptly, brought the Squire to pay me a Visit; on which I would have retired, but he took Hold of me, and told me I ought not to blame *Numps* for what he had done, for a Gentleman must defend his Honour, and his Mistress. I kept an obstinate Silence all the Time they staid; and had I had a Weapon proper, I believe I should have had Strength to have run it thro' his perfidious Heart. My Father said, in a menacing Way, Well, *Lucy*, *Numps*, and I are going into *Yorkshire* to settle Matters for your Removal Home; and then I expect you'll——d'ye hear me,——do as I order you, and think no more of a Man who deserved to die, and was beneath your Notice. I made no other Answer, than by a Flood of Tears, which hindered my Sight, and they departed. My Aunt and Cousin were shocked at this Inhumanity, so much, that they could not speak to him, and I told those Ladies, very deliberately, after they were gone, that I'd never more see *Yorkshire*, or the Face of my cruel Father, whatever became of me. They were frightened at the Manner of my Expression; and, the next Day, my Aunt having consulted with herself, proposed the

the following Scheme, not thinking that I would long persist in my Resolution ; and she hoped, by flattering my Disposition, to keep me from Suicide, which was what she imagined I hinted at ; and, at the same Time, she knew it would bring my Father to his Senses. Dear *Lucy*, says she, I was brought up in *France*, and have contracted Friendships there.—I long to see that Kingdom again, and we will all three, for some Years, leave this fatal Country ; but, as I can't keep you from your Father's Authority, you shall fall sick, and, seemingly, die ; we'll make a sumptuous Funeral for you, and bury you apparently among the Family at *Taunton*. You shall, mean Time, till our Embarkation go to a distant Tenant's of mine in *Exeter*, who will never betray our Secret ; and, after you are buried, I'll write such a Letter to your Father, as, perhaps, may entirely alter the System he at present acts upon. My Estate is sufficient for all our Uses, and you and my Daughter shall have an equal Claim to it with myself. I jumped at this Proposal ; it flattered the gloomy, despairing Condition I was in ; I hated *Yorkshire* ; I hated *England* ; I almost,—I could not help it,—hated my obdurate Father ! What my Aunt proposed, was a Scheme politically to over-reach my disordered Mind, I improved into a settled Vow, never to see my Father, or my native Country, again.—Perhaps I had some Principles, like Revenge, then in my Heart.—Yes,—I confess I had,—but your Mother and Father I thought of with great Affection : I could have wished the former had known the Truth of my Destination ; but, at last, I resolved she should not, lest, from Tenderness to me, she might betray me to my Father ; I therefore desired my Aunt to write a Letter to her of my Death ; and

in it I inclosed my Picture, as a Present to her, which I had got drawn on Purpose for you, and you have got it, Sir; and, if you value the Original, as much as you have that Copy, I shall be the happiest Woman living. In short, I died, — was buried, — as had been concerted; my Aunt wrote a terrible Letter to my Father upon it; and, without waiting an Answer, we hired a Vessel for *France*, where we safely arrived, after a pretty turbulent Passage. My Aunt had so settled her Affairs, that her Steward remitted her the Profits of her Estate quarterly; and, it being large, the dear Woman has kept up a grandeur Equipage than she did in *Somersetshire*. We have now been in this House near eight Years, and, keeping little Company, we have been happy in ourselves, and have, by numerous good Offices, contributed to the Happiness of others. Our Needle-work and our Books, and now and then a Ride or a Walk, have been our principal Avocations, I mean that of my Aunt and my *Serena*; for as to myself, I have not enjoyed a Moment's Ease; your endearing Form has ever been before my Eyes; and the Tortures of my Soul, the Perturbations of my Heart, my departing, dying, bleeding Heart, even the Pen or Tongue could never be able to describe! I have resolutely hitherto refused to hear from, or send to my Father, or *England*; and my dear Aunt has humoured my Disposition so far, as never to mention one Word of the Intelligence she has, at Times, received. I must own, since your Account of my poor Father's Repentance, so long ago, I burn to fling myself at his Feet, to ease the Tortures of his now-altered Mind; and, since I have recovered my dear *Thompson*, *Yorkshire* will be the only agreeable Spot to me in the World. I long to see your dear Father and Mother

ther also, and my poor *Fidele*, and to return my Thanks to your Mr. and Mrs. *Goodwill*, and all the rest of our Friends, and to be happy once more amongst them.

My Cousin and I had been to see a Lady of the Court at *Versailles*, when I saw you come down the Walk, and heard your well-known Voice, and the Surprize, for I immediately thought, with the Vulgar, it must be an Apparition, made me faint away, and the rest that followed you are acquainted with. Mr. *Sbarpely* has also Occasion to remember it, continues my *Louisa*, with a heavenly Smile, for he lost his Heart the Moment, he says, he saw my much loved *Serena* ; tho' I think, if I understand the Language of their Eyes, he has got as precious a Pledge in Return. When Mr. *Sbarpley* was persuaded to stay that Night, we endeavoured to get your Name, if haply you wore Flesh and Blood about you, and his Account of your Adventures confirmed me we had both been imposed upon. I longed to know, if you were really as faithful to your lost *Louisa*, as it was said you was ; and, your Resolution never to converse with the Sex, rendering it impossible to see you under that Character, I proposed to my Aunt and Cousin the Resolution I had taken, to get into your Service as a Page. This you are sensible I did, thro' the good Offices of Mr. *Sbarpley* ; and I faithfully served you, under the Name of *Estampe* ; but Mr. *Thompson*, if I loved you before with an Intenseness of Affection, how must your *Louisa* love you now ! improved in Knowledge ! improved in Goodness ! and so constant to your first Affection, as often, whilst I attended you, made me lift up my Eyes, in Thanks and Praises to the Almighty, for forming so excellent a Copy of his own Perfections here below ! In Defence of
this

this dear Man, says *Louisa*, turning to the two Ladies and Mr. *Sbarpley*, I did a Thing beyond the usual daring of my Sex, and fired a Pistol, and killed a Man ; but there can be Wonder in all that, seeing, if he had died, I should soon have followed him ! Come, Mr. *Thompson*, let us haste to *England*,—my Father can no longer deny his Consent ;—he repents,—you are rich, and we can't live without each other, and I'll study to be grateful to you for all your Constancy, by ordering every future Action of my Existence, so as to please—*my Life, my Lord, my Husband.*

Thus the melodious, angelic Voice, ceased the charmingly eloquent, and sensible Narration, and, for some Time buried, absorbed in Admiration, I could not utter one Syllable, but fondly gazed, and devoured all her World of Perfections with my Eyes. At length I broke out into such Raptures, as well nigh, with mere over-straining Nature, had robbed me of Life. Lovely, dear *Louisa* ! heavenly Maid ! 'tis impossible for me to express what I feel of thy matchless unprecedented Virtues ! Had I the tuneful Tongue, the gentle Lyre of a *Catullus*, the *Horatian* Lute, the Numbers of the melting *Waller*, the prevailing Art of *Sedley*, I could then scarce do thy Merits adequate Justice ! Oh !

*For thee each gladsome Morn shall wake ;
 Grey E'en replete with Bliss, retire ;
 My LUCY I will ne'er forsake,
 But still, to salt'ring Age, admire.
 Ever the same, no Discord shall decrease
 Our settled Happiness, celestial Peace.
 Politeness smooth, and Decency, shall sway
 Our Thoughts, our Acts, and Reasons forceful Ray.*

Yes,

Yes, we will return to the Arms of our Friends, and the Embraces of our Parents ! I burn, I sigh, I die, till I have thee mine for ever !

Mr. *Sbarpley*, her Aunt, and *Serena*, were quite delighted with her Manner of relating her Adventures ; and all, in their Turn, thanked her in the politest and wittiest Terms, for the Compliments she had bestowed upon them. And, is it true, says *Sbarpley*, that I have got my *Serena's* Heart ?——Blissful Discovery ! Is it true, my Angel ? Nay, ask my Cousin, replied that amiable Lady ; my Cousin says so, and she never tells an Untruth. He got up, embraced her first, and then her Mother ; and never, sure, were a happier Set of People seen together.

C H A P. LIX.

They settle their Affairs in France.——Madam Rich disposes of her House and Goods.——They stay some Time in Paris.——Meet with an Object of Charity.——Thompson relieves him, notwithstanding a former Piece of ill Usage.——They take Leave of their Friends.——Set out with Passports from Flanders.——Arrive at Williamstadt.——Embark for England.—Land at Harwich.

MR. *Sbarpley* and myself soon settled what Affairs we had to transact at *Paris* ; and, having now gratified our Curiosity with the Sight of every Thing worth viewing, we only waited till *Madam Rich* had discharged her Servants, except the *English* ones she brought over with her ; and disposed of the House she had bought at *St. Clou*, and the Furniture which was very superb ; which she soon did, to great Advantage, My-
heer

heer *Van Straaten*, the *Dutch* Resident, making a Purchase of the whole. My *Louisa* had lived so recluse, since her being in *France*, that she had not seen many of the remarkable public Places, Buildings, and Palaces ; so that we determined to take Lodgings at *Paris* for a Fortnight, and do all we could, and dedicate the whole Time for the Entertainment of the Ladies. One Day, when we were at the *Hotel Dieu*, a recovered Patient, amongst others, attended to shew us the several Wards and Conveniencies of that noble Charity ; and I soon found, by his Accent, that he was an *Englishman* ; and looking stedfastly upon him, methought I also recollected his Features. I asked him where he was born in *England*, he said in *London*, and that his Name was *Deacon*. I think I have heard of a Merchant of that Name. I had a Brother a Merchant, Sir, he replied, and I was his unfortunate Successor in the Business. I found now it was really poor Mr. *Deacon's* Brother, who had been the Cause of my Arrest and Imprisonment in the *Fleet* so many Years before ; but appeared to be in such miserable Circumstances, that I was resolved I would not mortify him, by making myself known ; for nothing can be greater Cruelty, than to insult over the Miseries, even of an Enemy : I was, instead thereof, really concerned, and grieved to the highest Degree ; and all my old Regard for his worthy Brother returned fresh into my Mind. I was curious to know how he came into an Enemy's Country, and what had reduced him to such a forlorn Situation. He informed me that he had suffered great Losses in Trade before the War broke out, and, at last, was obliged to fly to *France*, with a very small Sum in his Pocket, to avoid the Miseries of a *Goal*, in his native Country ; and that he lived some Time as a Clerk
to

to a Merchant at *Bologne*, but his Master failing, he could find no further Business in his own Way, after spending the little Money he had in Search of it; and mere Want induced him to enlist as a common Soldier, in the Regiment of *Picardy*; that, in a smart Engagement between the *French* and the *Allies*, he had the Misfortune to have two of his Fingers shot off, and was discharged as unfit for Service; that he stroled to *Paris*, begging most Part of the Way, and was there taken ill in the Street of an Ague and Fever, and sent to the Hospital by the Parish where he was found; and hoped soon to be able to shift for himself, and get over to *England*, if he could get Money to pay his Passage, where he did not doubt of meeting with Friends to serve him; and, as he was a Fugitive, of getting clear of his Debts, by an Act of Insolvency, which he heard had lately passed. My Heart was moved at his dreadful Relation, and, calling him aside, I told him I was his Countryman, and could not bear to see him in so much Distress, and begged he'd suffer me to make him a small Present; on which I slipped twenty *Louis d'ors* into his Hand; and he was so overcome at the Sight of it, that he was ready to drop down before me; his Face turned pale as Death, and his Knees tottered under him. Mr. *Sbarpley* had an Eye upon me; and, finding what I was about, approached, and told me he hoped I would let him advance his Mite to the Relief of a Countryman under Misfortunes, and made him accept of ten *Louis d'ors* more; adding, if it had not been for you my dear Friend, I should have made but a bad Figure not long ago myself: We are all subject to the unavoidable Ills of Life, and should consider our Fellow-creatures under such Calamities, as Types of

VOL. II. M what

what the best of us may one Day be. Madam *Rich*, and the Ladies, would know the Business we were about, and all three made him handsome Presents ; upon which his Joy flashed from his very Eyes, and dwelt, in involuntary Smiles, on his Countenance.

Soon after we took Leave of Monsieur *Du Plessis* and his Family, Monsieur *Bassompierre*, Count *Garonne*, and all our Friends in *Paris*, who loaded us with Civilities, and having obtained the proper Passports, which we had a great deal of Difficulty to do, we set out for *Flanders*, by the Rout of *Cambray*, where, after staying some Time, as we did indeed in every remarkable Place, for the Ease, and at the same Time, for the Entertainment of our Fair Fellow-travellers, having obtained a *safe Conduct* for any Place where we met with the Troops of *France*, we arrived at *Antwerp* ; from whence, in a Day and a half we came to *Williamstadt*, where we designed to embark for *England*. My *Louisa*, *Serena*, and the old Lady, preserved their Healths and Spirits surprisingly well, during this long and fatiguing Progress, notwithstanding, at many Places in *Flanders*, the Accommodations are so mean, that the lowest Wretch in *England* would grumble to be forced to take up with them ; and this may be observed, for the Honour of our Country, that in no Part of the World you meet with such Fare, and such Treatment, as in the Inns upon the Roads in *England*. *France* and *Holland* come nearest to the same Standard ; but as to the *Spaniards*, *Italians*, *Germans*, and all other People in *Europe*, the Usage amongst them is coarse, but tricking, their Accommodations wretched, and their Fare execrable. I was now quite gay, pleased, and chearful ; all the World appeared to me in an amiable Light ; I had

had no Resentment in my Breast ; Mankind were forgiven by me, for all their Oddities and their Follies, which now seemed rather Virtues than Crimes. Alas ! how Misfortunes sour a Man to the Relish of Life ; the least Thing said or done, that contradicts his Humour or particular Fancy, is construed into a Fault.—Tired with Living, —fretted, and continually vexed by his uneasy Thoughts, or Condition, he looks upon all Men as his Enemies, and sees Absurdities in their Conduct, which at another Time, would only seem Peccadilloes, and be easily looked over.

We were the most at a Loss to preserve the Decorums, in this Country, due to the Sex ; but, with the Assistance of the Officers of both the *French* and Allies, we did tolerably well, and could generally provide one Bed for the three Ladies, in a Country harrassed by the Marches and Counter-marches of, and the numerous Devastations caused by two potent Armies ; and all the Praise imaginable is due from me to the military Gentlemen on both Sides, who freely granted us *Escorts*, where they thought it would contribute to our Ease and Safety, from Post to Post. Ye Powers ! did I ever think, could I have the least Idea, of enjoying thus the Society, without Fear or Interruption, of my angelic *Louisa*, now truly mine, since dead to all the World beside ; and, if little Tender Fears, now and then intruded themselves, for her Safety and Protection, it sprang from no such low Principle as Jealousy, for that Passion was quite lost in the Confidence I reposed in the lovely Creature : In short, we were such a Sett of People, as nothing now could possibly disturb ; we were secure of our Freight, and myself and *Sharp-ley* acted as if we had the Wealth of both *Indies* in our Possession. The Elevation of Sentiment, our

soft Companions inspired, gave all our Actions a noble and generous Cast; we were kind, even to a Fault, to our Servants, and bestowed Largeſſes upon the Soldiers, with a princely Magnificence, particularly to thoſe who every Day arrived at *Williamſtadt* from *England*, yet unacquainted with the Hardſhips and Fatigues of the War.

We hired a Veſſel for ourſelves, but, Capt. *Sbarpley* ſoon after meeting with the Captain of a Man of War of 20 Guns, an old Acquaintance, he got Leave of the Commodore to take us on Board, and ſtand over to *Harwich*; which he did, and we ſafely landed at that Place, in 36 Hours after we weighed from *Holland*; making Captain *Tripſac*, our Commander, a very handſome Preſent for his Good-nature and Politenefs, and beſtowing a conſiderable Benefaction upon his brave and undaunted Seamen.

C H A P. LX.

Is accoſted by an Acquaintance. — Makes him an handſome Preſent. — They ſet out for London. — Are known at Colcheſter. — By whom diſcovered, — They arrive in London. — Send for Mr. Prig. — Tender Scene between Thompson and Miſs Rich.

WE had juſt ſettled ourſelves, and were going to Dinner at the beſt Inn in the Town, when Word was brought me, that a Gentleman who had ſeen us come in, deſired to ſpeak to me; upon which I begged the Favour of the Meſſenger to deſire him to walk in; — He came, and at his firſt Entrance I really did not at all remember

ber him, but he no sooner essayed to pass the usual Compliments upon me, than I, shaking his Hand with a good deal of Heartiness, said, What, —Mr. *Brisk*, my old Friend,—how could you know a Man so much altered since you saw him in the *Fleet*, both in Habit and Person? Sir, he replied, it was a long Time before I could recollect you; but at last, I did make shift to remember Mr. *Thompson*, my Master's Friend, whom I left but Yesterday; and he telling me, you was every Day expected from *France*, it added to my Memory's Ability. I asked him what brought him down to *Harwich*? He told me, that by his Master's Recommendation, he was appointed Clerk to the *British Commissary* in *Flanders*, and was going to *Helvoetsluys* in the *Pacquet* from *Harwich*, having transacted first some Business for Mr. *Prig* at *Colchester*. I was glad to see this young Gentleman, to whom I had forgot to be grateful for his former ready and willing Attendance under my Misfortune; and after staying him to Dinner, and entertaining him with agreeable Satisfaction, I took him aside, and told him, that I was sorry I had not Thought of my Obligations to him before I left *England*; but I hoped he'd excuse me, and that it was not too late to shew him my Gratitude; upon which I put a *Bank-note* for an Hundred Pounds into his Hands. He blushed, and would have refused the Favour; but I insisted on his Acceptance of it, and told him that when he came again to *England*, I would endeavour to settle him in his old Profession, in which, I was sure, from the Example of Mr. *Prig*, he would behave so as to become a Blessing, and not a Curse to the World, as too many Attornies were. He was all Rapture at my Kindness, and returned me a Million of Thanks; but, the *Pacquet* being ready to

fail, I had not an Opportunity of further Conversation, and he took his Leave.

The next Day we hired a Coach and a Sett of Horses, and set out full of Joy for *London*. We were now upon *Engliff* Ground, and hastening to the Embraces of our Friends, who I did not doubt were impatient to see me, and had for a long Time expected my Arrival; tho', as to Captain *Sharpley* and the Ladies, they could have no Idea of the Arrival of such Persons. Oh! what Floods of rapturous Delight overspread our Bosoms, the nearer and nearer we approached the Place of our Nativities, or the Scenes that were to terminate our uncommon Adventures, in so gladsome, so happy an Union, as we expected soon to experience; At *Colchester*, when we had just alighted in the Inn-yard, I was seized by the Arms of a Gentleman in Boots, who hugged me so closely, so swiftly, and so eagerly, that I had not Time to discover who he was, till I heard him repeat, every now and then, My dear Master,—arrived at last,—my Friend,—my Son, my every Thing that is valuable; and then, by the Expression and the Voice, I knew it to be my honest faithful *Truman*. I returned his Carresses, with an enlivening Fervour, and an Emotion of Heart, that was inexpressibly touching to me;—we shed Tears, and my Company soon understood, by hearing me repeat,—Dear *Truman*,—over and over, that he was that worthy Domestic they had heard me so often celebrate the Praises of. We retired into a Room, and I presented him to *Sharpley* and the Ladies, who caressed him without Measure; when he approached my *Louisa*, he started back some Paces, and, lifting up his Hands and Eyes, turned towards me, and said, Ah, dear Sir, what do I see! you are either very happy, or my Fancy has cheated me with an Illusion;

Illusion ;—sure it is Miss *Rich*, whom I have so often seen in *Yorkshire*,—arisen from the Dead, and whom you have so sorely, and for so many Years so justly lamented.---Yes, the dear Maid replied, I can't keep so good a Friend to Mr. *Thompson* in the Pain of Suspence : I am that Person, and have as sincerely lamented your Master, who I thought was lost for ever. *Truman* fell on his Knees, and kissed her Hand, again and again, and was so transported, that for some Time he could only utter such disjointed Sentences, as the Fullness of his Joy would permit. He danced, he sung, and practised over so many different Movements of Passion, that I feared it would turn his Brain : When somewhat calmer, he, on my Enquiry, told me, Mr. *Goodwill* and his Spouse, Mr. and Mrs. *Bellair*, and Miss *Sukey*, were in Town, and that he left them at Mr. *Diaper's*, where his Son also was, in earnest Expectation of my Arrival ; that, at their Desire, and from his own Impatience to see me, he had undertaken to cross in the Pacquet to *Holland*, and, having obtained a proper Passport, to wait upon me at *Paris*, for which Purpose he had got as far as *Colchester* on his Way, when he had the good Fortune to meet us in so surprizing and unexpected a Manner. Your Father, Sir, added he, has been in Town twice since your last Letters ; but is at present gone down to *Yorkshire*, where he hopes soon to see you. He did not remember any Thing of *Sharpley*, till he told him who he was, at which he embraced him feelingly, and congratulated his safe Arrival in *England*, telling him his Father was very well, with the whole Family : But, Sir, he continued, is my dear Lady here to be discovered immediately ? If I might advise, I would persuade her to be disguised, that she may see Sir *Walter*, without his knowing her,

and, which I am sure he'll be ready to do, he may give her to your Arms himself, without knowing he bestows his Daughter upon you, whose Loss and the Injuries he has caused to you, he still laments in the most affecting Manner. We listened with Pleasure to his Proposal, and resolved to put his Scheme in Execution, and to keep her Revival to Life a Secret to every one, till our Marriage was performed; and by Madam Rich's Desire, I would keep him no longer, but sent him up to Town, with a Commission to hire a ready furnished House for the Ladies in the most genteel Part of the Town, till I had settled my Affairs in *London*, and could attend them to *Yorkshire*. We now, on that Account, to give him proper Time, staid some Days at *Colchester*, and in the Rout to *London*, employed as much Time as we could, so that it was near a Week before we entered into that, to me well known Metropolis, which we did in the Evening; and *Truman* waiting, according to a Letter of Advice I sent him, at the *White Hart Tavern*, in *Holbourn*, we immediately took another Coach, and conveyed our fair and dear Companions to an House in *Red Lion Square*, which we found *Truman* had made Choice of with a great deal of Judgment; every Thing about it being in the most polite and elegant Taste.

The next Day with *Sharpley* I went to the *Temple Exchange Coffee-house*, dressed in the richest Manner, and going into a Room above Stairs, sent the Waiter away to Mr. *Prig's* Chambers, to acquaint him, that two Gentlemen desired to speak with him. *Prig*, I found was very particular in enquiring after our Appearance &c. no Doubt, suspecting it was me, and soon after arrived; I got up and stood at the Window, with my
Back

Back towards the Door, having given *Sharpley* a Letter for him, as from me, and proper Instructions how to behave. Whon he came in, Mr. *Sharpley* asked him, if his Name was *Prig*? To which having answered in the Affirmative, he told him, he had seen a Gentleman in *France*, one Mr. *Thompson*, who had desired him to bring him that Letter, and to drink a Glass of Wine with him. *Thompson*, Sir, says he, you honour me, and oblige me!—How does that dear Friend do, whom we have expected every Day in *England*? I left him, Sir, replies *Sharpley*, in a very bad State of Health; but,—good G-d, the other interrupted with a Sigh, Is he at *Paris*, Sir? He was there, Sir, when I was there.—I'll go over in the Pacquet and see my valued Friend, let what will be the Consequence? He spoke this so touchingly, that I could refrain no longer, and, turning round, cried, No, my dear Sir, you shall have no such fatiguing Journey, behold your *Thompson* here, and more your's than ever! he jumped from his Seat, and, after gazing wistfully upon me, run into my Arms, and almost devoured me with Embraces, which I returned as cordially, it was some Time before we were able to speak: It was all Madness of Extasy, and *Sharpley* was forced merrily to interpose, to bring us to the Level of rational Creatures. I then let him know who that Gentleman was, and that he was quite overjoyed to see him, and the Relation of our Adventures gave him fresh and added Satisfaction. Well, Gentlemen, says he, thank Providence you are returned safe and happy, which will glad the Hearts of all your Friends, as much as it does mine. Your Mr. *Diaper*, and all the rest that are in *London*, long as much to see you as they ever did for any Thing in the World, my Friend, Mr.

Goodwill has staid in *London*, a considerable Space of Time on Purpose ; but what do you think ? *Prim* and his Family are come to *England*, and I am just now preparing the Title Deeds of an Estate, he purchased near *Chestnut*, in *Hertfordshire*. This more and more encreased my Satisfaction, already risen to a great Height, and I could not help, tho' I had resolved to the contrary, to impart to *Prig* the Secret of my having found my long lost *Louisa* ; at which he was all Wonder and Astonishment, and exclaimed on the Goodness of Providence, and the surprizing Ways it every Day takes to bless Mankind.

Prig was just the same Man as when I left him, and was still unmarried ; but by the great and extraordinary Favours bestowed on him by Mr. *Goodwill* and Mr. *Bellair*, and the Recommendations of Mr. *Diaper* and my Father, had had such a Flow of Success in his Profession, that he was already set above the World, and had acquired a genteel Fortune.

I begged him not to give the least Hint to our other Friends of my Arrival, because I intended to go down to Mr. *Diaper*'s, and surprize them agreeably by my Presence ; and that the Recovery of *Louisa* might be a Secret to every Body but himself : We then took him with us to sup with the three Ladies, and he was struck with Admiration at the Charms of my *Louisa*, and her Conversation, and repeated, as he went away, several Times to me, She is a most lovely Creature ! —I never saw such Beauty before !

Mr. *Sbarpley* and I had been in the City with *Prig*, and I had bought a rich Diamond Solitaire, and he had purchased a magnificent Pair of Earrings, as Presents for our two Mistresses, and some Trinkets for the old Lady, and had hired a Coach and a Chariot of a proper Person to attend them

them during their Stay in *London*: After *Prig* was gone, we each of us presented our Jewels, and I had the Happiness to put mine round the delicate Neck of my Angel, who was quite struck with the Action, and said, You are very gallant, my dear Mr. *Thompson*,—and study so many Ways to oblige me, that I can't express the tender Sentiments that croud into my Mind towards you. Ah! lovely Maid, I replied, can I do too much, in the whole future Course of my Life, to merit the Regards of the dear Creature who has suffered so much on my Account, and is such a Miracle of Beauty, Truth, and Constancy? *Serena* received her Present with Joy, and the old Lady took it so well, that we remembered her in these Trifles, that she was in an extreme good Humour upon it, and told *Sharpley*, that she would take Care and make him such Satisfaction, that on his Marriage, beside her Daughter's Fortune, she would give him an Estate, that should equal him with the best Gentleman in the County of *York*. *Sharpley* and *Serena* both threw their Arms about her Neck, and embraced this kind Mother, and we were so transported with each other's Company, that it was very late before we left them to retire to a Lodging, *Truman* had provided for us in the Neighbourhood. The next Day, I ordered *Truman* to let me have Bank Bills to the Value of a Thousand Pounds, one of which I turned into *Guineas*, and putting all together into a rich Purse, which I had purchased on Purpose for the Occasion, I waited on the Ladies, and taking my *Louisa* into her Closet, I began thus, My lovely Creature! I now hope you look upon yourself as mine, and that you ought to share with me that Fortune Providence has permitted me to gain, and which, if Sir *Walter* had it in his Power to deny his Con-

sent

sent to our Union, or should deprive us of his Favour, is sufficient to make us happy! I can't bear you should be longer obliged to Madam *Rich*, for what you may have in your own Person, and really do possess; take this Purse, and its Contents, which will suffice for the Remainder of your Expences in your Maiden State, and provide yourself with every Thing you shall have an Use or Fancy for before we set out for *Yorkshire*. The dear Angel looked at me with a World of Tenderness, whilst I was speaking, and then broke forth into the following Speech! My dear *Thompson*, I accept your generous Present, in Trust for your Use, and hope I shall manage this with the same Prudence I shall always study to behave with in your Affairs. I do always look on myself as yours, and only yours, for my Father has I think greatly forfeited his Authority over me by his Usage; but still let us practise all the Duty due to Parents, and then if he refuses his Consent, or is angry when he discovers his Daughter, under the Character of your Wife, why let him dispose of the dirty Acres as he pleases; I have Stock of Affection sufficient I hope to compensate for their Loss to you; but I look for happier Things, and believe he will now be proud of his Son-in-law! To say, I am surprized at your Present, would be glossing too much the Sentiments of my Mind, for, knowing my dear *Thompson*, I know him capable of every Thing good, and kind, and generous; but how,—which Way,—shall I, can I reward his Goodness to his *Louisa*? Your being sensible only, my sweetest *Louisa*, of my Pains, my Sufferings,—your approving my Passion, your consenting to bless me with that World of Charms,—to give me that soft Hand,—to be mine for ever,—is more than a Recompense for Ages of Torture.
—And,

—And, ah, for ever, shall the dear condescending *Gentleness* be the Guide, the Motive to all my Actions. I will haste, Love, and finish my Affairs in Town, and prepare to launch into an Ocean of Bliss, which can have no Alloy.

C H A P. LXI.

He goes down to Mr. Diaper's.—Joy on seeing him.—Carries them to see his Louisa.—Receives Letters from Mr. Saris.—Generosity of that Gentleman.—Mr. Goodwill's excessive Kindness.—Visits Mr. Prim.—He finishes the Settlement of his Affairs.—They set out for Yorkshire.

WHEN a Week more had passed, in which we were taken up in visiting all the Curiosities in the City and Neighbourhood of London, to which our *Louisa* and her Cousin *Serena* were as yet Strangers, never having been in that Metropolis before ; I could not further restrain the Impatience I was agitated with to see my dear Friend, and the Rest of the amiable Society, who, we understood by *Prig*, were still at my old Master's in the Country ; and, accordingly, that Gentleman, Captain *Sharpley*, and *Truman* accompanied me there. As we approached the well known Spot, it recalled to my Memory a thousand former Scenes of Happiness and Misery that had occurred to me ; but all this served now only to encrease my present Satisfaction, which was unbounded. We arrived, and I was no sooner entered the Room where they were at Dinner, than I was universally known at first Sight, and they had well nigh, in their Hurry of rising to congratulate my Appearance, overturned the Table they were

were sitting at. My Master, Mr. *Goodwill*, and Mr. *Bellair*, were never tired of straining me in their Arms ; the Ladies gazed upon me with the utmost Fondness, and wept plentifully with mere Joy. I returned their Caresses with Interest, and shed a Flood of Tears, which my full Heart could not restrain : But, as to my Friend and myself, it was all Delight and Transport that seized us, and we were near a Quarter of an Hour in one another's Embraces, saying all the tender and affectionate Things that inspired our Bosoms. When we were somewhat calmer, our Discourse, however, was equally touching, and we were never tired of making fond Enquiries into each other's Health and Welfare, and the Accidents that had befallen us. They knew most Part of what had happened to me from Mr. *Diaper*, but as to what had passed since our sailing from the *Cape of Good Hope*, I was obliged to recount it to them ; which I did in as succinct a Manner as possible, and, notwithstanding my Resolution to the contrary, I could not help letting them into the Miracle of my recovering *Louisa*, knowing it concerned us only to keep it a Secret from Sir *Walter* ; at which Eyes and Hands were lifted up in wondering Admiration at the Goodness of Heaven ! and then they all burst out into fresh Congratulations to me on my inexpressible Happiness, and proposed the next Day to pay a Visit to the Ladies our Fellow-adventurers. Captain *Sharpley*, whose Father was known to them intimately, was received with the utmost Politeness, and every one at first Sight entertained a Friendship for him, particularly, my dear *Diaper* ; and we three happy Lovers exulted together upon the blissful Situation we were at present Witnesses to in each other. We went to Town the same Day to prepare my *Louisa*, Ma-
dam

dam *Rich*, and *Serena* for the intended Visit, that was to be paid them on the Morrow ; and I intreated my dearest Maid to dress herself in the richest Manner she could, which she, smiling, promised to comply with. She asked me, if I had heard any Thing more of her *Pappa* ? I told her, he was well as ever ; but still as much grieved at what had happened in our Affairs, and for her Loss ; that the Squire, as Mrs. *Goodwill* had informed me, was still at his own Seat at *Doncaster*, and, notwithstanding all the Arts he could use, had never been able to mollify his Uncle, who had been informed of his Villainies, by one of the Fellows that attended him, when I was last used so ill by him ; and, again, his Meanness and Baseness, in persuading him, that he had killed me, by which Report he had lost his *Louisa*, had more and more exasperated him against him : He had been informed, by the very Person who wrote me the Letter of Caution when I was at my Father's, of my Life's having been attacked by his Procurement, near his own House. He had pardoned that Fellow for his Honesty, but had by continual Prosecutions driven the Rest out of the County, as a Sacrifice for the Injuries I received from him ; and that he was at present in such a Temper, that it was believed, if no Art at all were used, he'd readily at the unexpected Sight of us consent to our Marriage. All this gave my *Louisa* new Spirits, and she cried, Oh ! how I long to sooth the Pains of this cruel, yet repentant Father ! Our Visitors arrived the next Day, and we introduced them to Madam *Rich*, who entertained them whilst *Sharpley* and myself went to bring in our adorable Mistresses. I never was surprized at any Thing before, so much as at the fine and lovely Figure my *Louisa* made ; her Dress was magnificent to the last Degree, and she was all
over

over apparently a *Climax* of Stars that blazed in the Jewels that adorned her : Round her Neck hung the *Solitaire* I had presented to her, and at a Locket my Picture in Miniature, which I had sat for on Purpose to oblige her, in the trembling panting Bosom. We brought them into the Apartment, and all the Senses the Company had were now reduced to one, in viewing our two lovely, delightful Fair ones !

Mr. *Goodwill*, Mr. *Bellair*, Mr. *Diaper*, Mr. *Prig*, and all the Ladies in general, struck with Astonishment at her numerous Graces, advanced to meet her, and saluted her as a Person of whom they had received the highest Sentiments of Regard and Affection, and expressed after some Time by their Actions and Speech, how much they were pleased with her Conversation. *Serena* had her Share also in the Praises that were bestowed, and those two and Miss *Bellair* immediately commenced a Friendship for each other : Young Mr. *Diaper*, who was the only one present she had seen before, was particularly taken Notice of by her, and he whispered me, that he thought her infinitely improved, and still more wise and more lovely. In short, before they parted, they almost adored her ; and Mrs. *Diaper*, hugging me to her, said, *Joey*, I thought you would be happy at last, and see, Providence has blessed both you and my Son with its choicest Gifts, to whom I constantly return unfeigned Thanks for its Goodness to you, and for the Blessings it thereby provides for your Fathers and Mothers, and your Friends. And what, added her Spouse, is a prodigious Increase to all this Joy is, what few Persons can say ; they have not only been returned safe themselves to our Arms, but find all their Friends as safe and well, after eight Years absence, or more, when we had all the Grief of parting with them.

And

of parting with them. And thus, indeed, Providence has blessed us, and be its Goodness ever adored !

After this first Interview, they frequently waited upon each other, and *Louisa* often went to Mr. *Diaper's* with her Aunt and Cousin, and to the Houses of Mr. *Bellair* and Mr. *Goodwill* in Town, who were so enamoured of our angelic Family, that they were never ealy out of their Company. Mr. *Sharpley* was generally for the latter Part of our Stay in *London*, for I wrote, when I first arrived, to my dear Father and Mother, that I'd be down in a Month or six Weeks at farthest, their Squire and Conductor : As to myself and *Truman*, with the Assistance of *Prig* we were busy in settling my Concerns and putting my Money into the Funds, which I looked upon as my Duty till I could better employ it ; for nothing can become a true *Englishman* more than to assist the Government, which is at present supported against its Enemies Attacks, as much or more by the Influence of the monied People, to whom the present Establishment is a Security, for their Fortunes, as by the Share they have in the Hearts of the whole Kingdom, who must own the Blessings they derive from their mild and merciful Sway. My Merchandize, as well as that of Mr. *Saris*, most of the Produce of which *Truman* had paid to his Order, and what belonged to himself had been turned into Cash by *Truman*, except such Things as I reserved for my *Louisa's* Use, and for Presents to my Father, Mother, and other Friends, to whom also Mr. *Diaper* had been pretty profuse of the Curiosities of the *Eastern* World. About this Time I received a Letter from our Friend *Saris*, *Truman* having received several before I came over, which was to this Effect, in Answer to one from me :

My

My dearest FRIEND,

MY Trouble was excessive when I understood by *Truman's* last, that you had been taken in your Passage, and was a Prisoner in *France*; but, thank God, I now have received one from your own Hands, that testifies to me, to my infinite Satisfaction, that you are as happy, after a Series of uncommon Events in your Behalf, as Love, Wealth, and your native Country can make you! I rejoice greatly at this Turn of kind Providence in your Favour, and beg to hear from you every now and then, but particularly when you have made the adorable *Louisa* your own, As to poor *Saris*, he never intends to move from this Spot, where his whole Time is spent in the Care of a dear Son, and the Friendship of Sir *Thomas*, whom you have often heard me mention; yet all the while I am devoured by a slow and deadly Melancholy for my unhappy Fate in the Loss of my dear Wife, which nothing can ease but the obliterating Arms of Death, to which I shall give myself no Concern, let my Descent be ever so soon. *Truman* has remitted me in your Absence, all I could demand, save about 300 *l.* which I beg that faithful Creature would accept of as a Token of my Gratitude for the many Services he has done me, and for which I have inclosed a Discharge: May Heaven bless you my worthy dear *Thompson*, in all your good Undertakings, and may you reap those Felicities in this World, which were denied to

*Your truly affectionate and faithful Friend,
And obliged humble Servant*

Cork, July ———

WILLIAM SARIS.
I was

I was pleased to hear of our Friend's Welfare, and with *Truman*, struck with this Instance of the Generosity of his Temper : With this Encrease he had a Fortune of near 4000 *l.* which put that faithful Friend and Servant, in the State he could never have flattered himself with obtaining, had he staid in *England*, and not gone Abroad with me. We both of us wrote Answers to his kind Letters, and promised to preserve our Correspondence with him that Way, as often as we had an Opportunity.

The last Thing I had now remaining to settle was my Account with Mr. or rather Mrs *Goodwill*, who had generously ventured 2000 *l.* with me when I went to the *Indies* ; but, after all I could urge, neither he nor she would accept of one Farthing more than the original Sum. I was so acquainted with their Kindness and Affection for me, that I was not surprized so much as I otherwise should have been, and still insisted there was 12,000 *l.* due to them, whenever they pleased to call for it. If so, replies Mr. *Goodwill*, we'll make you our Steward, to employ it for the Good of Mankind, which nobody understands better how to do. He carried me to his Uncle, and most of the Directors, to return Thanks for their Goodness to me ; and to the former I made some Presents of Value that I had sent Home, which he received at my Hands with great Good-nature and Pleasure. And now all being ready for going into my native Country, which I longed heartily to see, I begged *Prig* and *Sbarpley* to accompany me to pay a Visit to *Prim*, who was gone from *London* to his new Seat in *Hertfordshire*, and accordingly we set out and got there about Dinner-time. As, by my Friend's Account, he every Day expected to see me, he was not much startled,

startled, but received me with that open and sincere Friendship that ever had distinguished his Actions. His Lady was but in a bad State of Health, or he would have accompanied us into *Yorkshire*, where all the Rest of my Friends had promised to repair. He gave me a Detail of what had happened to him since we met at Sea, and informed me, that his old Tyrant, Captain *Surly*, with his Nephew, were, going on Shore at an Island, one of the *Ladrones*, murdered by the Inhabitants, in revenge for having seized one of the Natives, a Female, and carried her on Board his Ship to gratify his brutal Lust. This Account he received from the *Supercargo*, who took his Part when the Captain beat him so violently in his Cabin. He rejoiced without Measure at my having recovered my *Louisa*, and we parted, after his making a Resolution to visit me in *Yorkshire* as soon as his Wife's Illness would permit him.

All Things ready, Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady, and Mr. *Diaper* and his Lady in Mr. *Goodwill's* Coach and Six; Mr. and Mrs. *Bellair*, Miss *Sukey*, and my dear *Diaper*, in Mr. *Bellair's* Coach; and Madam *Rich*, *Serena*, my *Louisa*, and *Sharpley* in a Coach Mrs. *Rich* had bought in *London*, with a splendid Retinue of Servants, set out for *Yorkshire*. Myself, Mr. *Prig*, and Mr. *Truman* rode on Horseback, and generally kept a Mile before the Coaches, to provide Refreshments, Quarters, and Accommodations, which was our Department. Never was a Set of happier People! Content sat on every Face, and Joy unbounded distended every Breast, with rapturous Emotions! And as to the three Lovers, never were Creatures so altered! No uneasy Pangs from Absence, or jealous Suggestions
of

of despairing Frenzy, now assaulted our Bosoms, and we experienced.

*Good after Ill, and after Pain Delight :
Alternate, like the Scenes of Day and Night.*

C H A P. LXII.

Arrive at Mr. Bellair's—Only Thompson and Sharpley set out for Mr. Thompson's with Truman.—They arrive there.—Joyous Emotions of his Father and Mother.—They wait on Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley.—Visit their Friends.—Receive a Message from Sir Walter Rich.—Visit him.—What passes upon it.

WE arrived happily at Mr. Bellair's Seat, where he insisted we should repose ourselves some Days, and were entertained with his usual genteel Hospitality, and he contrived all the Pleasures he could to divert the Ladies, and make their Stay agreeable to them. It was here agreed amongst us, that only myself, *Sharpley*, and *Truman* should proceed to my Father's as well to get proper Quarters for so numerous a Company, as to keep our Arrival a greater Secret from Sir *Walter* ; and accordingly, we set out, after recommending our lovely Mistresses to the Care of my Friend *Diaper*, who, at this short Separation, could hardly withhold the Tears that stood ready to start from their Eyes, upon which *Prig* bantered them very smartly. We made such Expedition, that we soon arrived within Sight of the dear and well known Plains, where first we drew our vital Breath. Ye Groves, I cried, receive under your cooling Shade once more your old Inhabitants ! Ye murmuring Streams, that o'er the unnumbered idle Pebbles stray, once more bring your bubbling Notes to our listening Ears ! Ye responsive

sponsive *Ecchoes*, once more repeat, in imitative Strains, the Name, the wondrous Charms of my *Louisa* that dwells upon my Tongue ! Ye conscious Bowers to Lovers Sighs and Vows for ever sacred, holy, once more to you we breathe the amorous Tale of soft, endearing Transports, now our own !

Mr. *Sharpley* gave me the Compliment of going first to my Father's, where we arrived, and giving our Horses to *Truman*, who staid without, enquired of a Servant, whose Face I well remembered, if Mr. *Thompson* was within ? He looked earnestly at me, and I could perceive by his not answering, and the visible Alteration of his Countenance, that he knew me ; which a little disconcerted us, and, before we could stop him, he opened the Parlour-door with eager Haste, and cried, Oh, Sir ! oh, Madam ! my young Master is——come Home ! There needed no more.——My dear Mother crying out, and running into the Passage, which we had just traversed as far as the Door, would have fainted, and fell, but that I caught her in my Arms, repeating, Best and most loved of Mothers ! Behold, at last, your Son, who ne'er will leave you more, nor more will cause your Tears !——And is it thee, My dearest, dearest *Joey* !——she replied,——how blessed, how happy am I——but yet,——how altered,——sure it can't,——it must,——it must be he, I feel it here, my Heart confesses him ! All this while I did not see my Father, and as soon as my Mother was somewhat calmed, tho' still she wildly gazed ; she led me into the Parlour, and *Sharpley*, who had taken no Notice, nor been taken Notice of, followed me,——We found that excellent Man just risen, trembling, from his Knees, where he had been pouring fourth Ejaculations of Praise for this
Happiness !

Happiness!——He advanced towards me, the Colour now going from, and now coming into his Face alternately, and he could scarcely support himself from falling, whilst I rushed into his Arms, and we both uttered the fondest, the most warm Expressions of paternal Affection,—filial Love and Duty! Reason, at length, resumed her Empire over us, and our Spirits more composed, *Sharp-ley*, seizing my Mother round the Neck, and then kissing the Hands of my Father, said, Sure, dear Sir, dearest Madam,—you have another Son,—that yet you have not acknowledged! they stared wistfully on him, but were still at Loss to know him,—till, I cried, Ah, can you forget your *Sharp-ley*, Sir? They both rose at this, and caressed him in the kindest, tenderest Manner, which he returned with a becoming Warmth.——We then sent a Servant to relieve *Truman*, who was received by my Father and Mother as a valued Friend. By this Time all the Neighbourhood were apprized by the Servants of our Arrival, the Bells rung, and the Farmers came in, to congratulate us. I hugged the honest People in my Arms, and was transported to see them; and, as to *Solfa*, he had so much Feeling upon the Occasion, that he could hardly speak, whilst *Sharp-ley*, and I embraced this honest Friend to our boyish Years. My Father, at my Desire, set open his Doors, and gave all the Parish a hearty Welcome to the best of Cheer, and the next Day we went over to Mr. *Sharp-ley's*, who was so overcome with this providential Recovery of his Son—and in such Company,—so happy in his Love,—that he dwelt for ever on the pleasing Topic, and never ceased embracing us; and Mr. *Archer* also, to whom I gave Tidings of our other Friend, was almost ready to die with joyous Emotion. They accompanied us to see all our old Friends

Friends and Associates of the neighbouring Villages and Hamlets, who thought themselves happy in the Notice we took of them ; and I begged my Father, in my Name and young Mr. *Sharpley's*, to give 500 *l.* in Charities to the distressed Poor, and the industrious Labourers of his Parish, which raised their Love and Veneration of me to a Height like Adoration. I was congratulated by every one upon my good Fortune, and in a Day or two after our Arrival, an Opportunity serving we at their Desire, related our Adventures to my Father and Mother, Mr. *Archer* and Mr. *Sharpley* ; but when I came to that Part of my Story, where I had found so miraculously my *Louisa*, it was a long Time before I could obtain Belief, tho' from Persons that confided in my Veracity, till our joint Protestations of the Truth, and as a Proof, her being so near us, confirmed what we said. Never were People so beside themselves with Joy.—the Bliss to them was unutterable !—My Father himself could not refrain from shewing the Share he took in my Felicity, by the most transported Acts of Satisfaction ; and my Mother now wept, and now smiled exulting at having recovered her dear dead *Louisa* ! They promised, however, to keep the Secret till a proper Time for Discovery, and my Father's, Mr. *Sharpley's*, and Mr. *Archer's* Houses, being sufficient to entertain all our illustrious Guests, they begged they might have that Honour ; and my Mother bespoke *Louisa* to be with her till our Nuptials, which I readily granted.

I was just designing to pay a Visit to Sir *Walter*, whose Pulse I longed to feel ; and indeed I longed to see him, and my old Regard for him was returned, when he sent a Servant to me to desire my Company at his House, and I taking Captain *Sharpley* with me, immediately obeyed
the

the Summons. We found him in the Apartment in which I had enjoyed so much Happiness, in a Mourning Dress, which he had worn constantly ever since he received the News of his Daughter's Death ! At the Sight of me, for he knew me immediately, the old *Baronet* burst into Tears, and said, Ah ! Mr. *Thompson*, you are too good,—I did not expect so ready a Compliance to my Desires,—I did not deserve it at your Hands,—I who murdered *Louisa*, and behaved so ungratefully, so wickedly to you—I was moved to see him so touched with Sorrow, and, advancing, pressed him in my Arms, whilst the Tears stood in my Eyes ; and replied, Dearest Sir,——my Father——for I must ever call you so,——forget whatever Injuries were done to me,—I forget them for ever,——you are punished enough, Sir, in the Loss of our dear and excellent *Louisa* ! Can I forget you are her Father,——and, tho' oppressed with the same Sorrow, will ever behave to you with Duty and Affection, and strive to lessen your Woes, or mix my own with them.—Ah ! generous Youth,——he returned,——How could I be blind to so much Merit ?—Oh ! if the dear Girl were now alive,——she surely should be thine ; but, since it cannot be recalled,——come live with me,——the Solace of my Age,——and accept of all that I can give at my Decease,——that Wretch, that Villain——that Bane to my Happiness——seduced me,——but no doubt, you've heard it all,——the sad, the fatal *Story*.——I have, dear Sir,——you are excusable, and highly so.——I accept your kind Proposal of living with you, and chearing my *Louisa's* Father in his Troubles ;—for Fortune I have enough,——and long for nothing now,——so much in Life,——as to punish, to chastise, that basest Wretch, your execrable, villainous Nephew ! *Fidèle* broke in, and

hanging about my Neck, repeated oft her Lady's Name with mine,—her dear Friend and Patron, her Mr. *Thompson*, and when we were taking our Leave, and retiring thro' the Gate, an honest looking Man and Woman, whom I did not recollect, gave me a thousand Blessings, and prayed for my long Life and Prosperity! I stood still, and after returning their Compliments, enquired how I came to merit such a Share of their Respect? The Man replied, with some Emotion, Dear Sir, if you have forgot us, we shall ever remember your bountiful Goodness to us, as well as that of our dear Lady departed. I then began to recollect somewhat of their Faces, and found it was the poor *Excise-man* and his Wife, whom my dear *Louisa* had so charitably relieved, and to whom I made a Present at my Departure for *London* so many Years ago. I saluted the Woman, and, taking the Man by the Hand, enquired, if I could be of any Service to them now? If I could, I was very ready to do it; but he replied, Sir, your Goodness overcomes me; but I want nothing at present, and have every Thing in the Service of Sir *Walter* that we can desire; for when he understood, that we had been the Objects of my late young Lady's Charity, he took us into his House, making me his *Bailiff*, and my Wife his *Landry-maid*, and has been intimately kind to me ever since. I was charmed to hear these Instances of his Regard to *Louisa's* Memory, and found every Thing so situated, that we had little Opposition to fear, even if he knew his Daughter's real Story.

I had presented Mr. *Sharpley* to him, who was going, tho' unknown to him, to be his Nephew; and he received him as the Son of a Gentleman he esteemed, and upon our mentioning the brilliant Assembly, that was coming down to the Marriage

riage of Mr. *Diaper*, and those of some other Friends, he generously offered his House also for their Accommodation.

C H A P. LXIII.

They return to Mr. Bellair's. — All set out for Mr. Thompson's. — Arrive there. — How they are disposed of. — He makes a Proposal to Sir Walter. — Sir Walter consents to it. — Fidele introduced to her Lady — Truman falls in Love. — Makes a Request to Thompson. He grants his Desire, and makes Louisa an Advocate for him. — Fidele grants his Suit, and obtains Sir Walter's Leave to marry him.

WE staid about a Week longer with our Parents, and now, longing to behold our Mistresses, accompanied by my Father, Mr. *Sharp-ley*, and Mr. *Archer*, we set out for Mr. *Bellair's*; and once more rejoined the dear Objects of our Affection, and gave our Company an Account of Sir *Walter's* Disposition; at which my *Louisa* was transported, and said, I think my dear *Thompson*, I had better die in earnest; you see you may have the Estate without the Incumbrance of a Wife. Ah, Madam! I replied, you know me too well to think I can even bear a smiling Sentence of that Sort from you: Without you all the Riches and Pleasures in the World would be distasteful. When my Father came forward at first to salute her, she would have fallen upon her Knees; but he caught her in his Arms, called her, *his sweet Daughter*, — *his Angel*, and told her, her Revival would add twenty Years to his Life. Mr.

Archer and *Mr. Sharpley*, in their Turns expressed how much they were affected with the Sight of her, and all our Company were charmed with the Presence of these three Gentlemen. It was agreed, that my *Louisa* should wear a Mask, till she got into private at my Father's, and every Thing being settled we set out for that loved Place ; but were quite surprized, at about a Mile from the House, to meet twenty Runners, all dressed in rural Pomp, with Ribbands and Flowers, being the young Men of my Father's Parish, and almost all the Gentlemen and Farmers on Horseback, who came to welcome us, and precede us thro' the Villages, where all the Bells rung our Welcome. We thanked the honest People for these Testimonies of their Respect, and when we alighted, *Mr. Diaper* threw a Handful of Money amongst the Runners, whose Example was followed by myself, *Mr. Goodwill*, and *Sharpley* ; and the Gentlemen were invited to partake of a cold Repast, which was prepared by my Mother for our Refreshment. *Louisa* and *Madam Rich*, with *Serena*, went into a back Parlour with my Mother, where, when she had unmasked, the Scene between them was too delicately melting and tender to be described ; —and, Dearest Mamma !—Sweetest, most excellent Daughter !—lovely *Louisa* !———was all they could for a long Time utter. The two Ladies were transported with the Conversation of this good Woman, who, in her Turn, conceived great Affection for them ; and as *Louisa* could not appear publickly yet, nor her Aunt or Cousin, *Sir Walter's* Servants knowing them, she spent the Remainder of the Day in their Company ; to which the other Ladies frequently paid Visits.

Sir Walter came to my Father's, unexpectedly, as soon as we arrived, to compliment the Company,

ny, and to give a general Invitation to them to his House ; and behaved more chearfully than he had done for a long Time before, often embracing me and my Friend *Diaper*, and calling us his Children. He was known to all the Company present, who had most of them spent some Time in *Yorkshire*, after my Departure for the *Indies* ; and as to the *Bellairs*, they were an' antient Family, and well known to him before. It was agreed, that Mr. and Madam *Goodwill*, with their Equipage, should go to Mr. *Archer's* ; Mr. *Bellair* and his Lady, and Servants to Mr. *Sharpley's* ; Mr. *Diaper* and his Wife, with *Prig*, to Sir *Walter's* ; and Madam *Rich*, *Serena*, *Louisa*, and Miss *Sukey* to remain at my Father's. As to *Diaper*, *Sharpley*, myself, and *Truman*, who I insisted should always now be treated and live like a Gentleman, we had Beds provided for us at our old Friend *Solfa's*, which we liked, as being nearer our Mistresses than any other Situation. Our Presence diffused Gladness all around the Country, and the Inhabitants of the Neighbourhood vied with each other in the Games and Sports they exhibited, upon Occasion of having such good Company amongst them. As it was thought proper, on account of the Concealment, I was forced to go to *York* for a Licence for my intended Marriage :—But, as to Mr. *Sharpley* and Mr. *Diaper*, my Father bad the Bans in his Church, which he thought the most primitive and regular Way. All Things being settled for the happy Moment that was to unite such faithful Lovers, and it being to be performed in three Days Time, I, one Morning, took Sir *Walker* aside, and began to talk to him thus :—My Father,—I have a Favour to beg of you :—My *Louisa* is no more ! and 'tis vain now to lament for what we can't recal.—Oh ! were she

but alive, I should be happy.—My Father has persuaded me, for some Family Reasons, to marry. I have paid my Addressee to a young Lady of Birth and Fortune, and she has yielded to my Suit.—You might once have made me happy, but that's past, and, as I could not receive my *Louisa* at your Hands, grant me the Favour to give away this Lady to me at the *Altar*, and adopt her for your Child. The old Gentleman wept, and reproached himself for his former Cruelty and Folly; but at length, consented to do as I proposed, for which I returned him my utmost Acknowledgments. I further requested of him, that he would suffer *Fidele* to attend upon her till the Marriage was over, which he, with great Readiness, granted also. I told that good Creature, that my Mother desired to see her, and she went over to our House directly, where she every Day, since my Departure, had visited. That dear Woman and Mrs. *Goodwill*, after caressing her, and introducing her to the rest of the Company, carried her into the Room where her Lady was playing upon the *Harp-sichord* to *Serena*, Miss *Sukey*, and Mrs. *Bellair*. She rose up, and the poor Girl, the Minute she saw her, swooned away, only crying out, Good God!—They brought her to herself; her Mistress embraced her, and was never tired of bestowing Kisses and Pressures upon her, which soon convinced her she was Flesh and Blood. She heard her Lady's Story with Admiration, like that one would express at seeing a Person rise from the Grave; and, falling upon her Knees, cried, Oh! Did I ever expect to be so happy!—whilst Tears of joyous Affection trickled fast from her Eyes!

Truman, as soon as I returned Home, begged me to walk into the Garden, and surprized me,
when

when he told me, that he hoped, as he had long and faithfully served me,—I would contribute to make him happy.—I love *Fidele*, Sir, have loved ever since I first saw her;—and I shall never be easy, if I have not her Heart and Person.—'Tis true, Sir, I am somewhat older than she is; but, when I was down before in *Yorkshire*, after I came from *India*, I paid my Addresses to her, and believe she was not indifferent to my Offers; and one Motive to her Condescension was, that I was valued and respected by you.—She will sooth my future Hours; and has imbibed such excellent Principles from my Lady, that she will be in herself a valuable Fortune. Do, Sir, speak to Miss *Louisa*, and, with her, endeavour to incline her to marry me. I was so pleased to hear this, that I could not enough express my Satisfaction, and promised to do all in my Power to serve him: Accordingly, I spoke to my *Louisa*, who was as pleased as myself to hear it; and we both in a proper Manner, spoke to *Fidele*; particularly *Louisa* represented him, as he really was, a very worthy and excellent Man, a good Friend of mine, beloved by us both, and one, who, in Person and Temper, was formed to make a Woman happy. In short we soon discovered, by her Eyes and her Answers, that she loved him, as much as he loved her;—and, blushing, she told us she would be ruled in any Thing by us. *Truman* was all Extasy, when he heard of her Compliance, and I went with him to Sir *Walter*, and represented him, and his Affairs, in such a Light, that he readily gave his Consent to her leaving him; and this News caused great Mirth and Pleasure to our whole Company; and we resolved their Marriage should be performed at the same Time with our own.

C H A P.

C H A P. LXIV.

*Mr. Archer the younger arrives in Yorkshire.—
 Another Visitor calls upon them.—The four ami-
 able Pair are married.—Sir Walter's Sur-
 prize and Joy in discovering his Daughter.—
 He pays her Fortune and makes over an Estate
 to them.—Their Guests depart.—Happiness
 that succeeds Thompson's Marriage.—Conclu-
 sion.*

THE next Day Mr. *Archer* brought up a Gentleman from his House, that, to my great Satisfaction, I found to be his Son, whose Presence, on the present happy Occasion, was prodigiously agreeable to *Sharpley*, and myself; and he was overjoyed when he heard how our Affairs stood. My Father and Mother almost overwhelmed him with Kindness; and, being presented to all our good Friends, they conceived so good an Opinion of him, as to give him, at once, a Place in their Esteem; but this was not the only unexpected Visitor that arrived, for a Gentleman alighted at my Father's, attended by several Servants, and asked for me. I came to him, and he accosted me with great Gentility, and said, That he had heard my Name mentioned at the next Town, as just arrived from Abroad, and that I was surrounded with numerous Friends; tho' unknown at present to me, he had formerly done me some Services, and was resolved to leave the Road, and make one in our happy Society, and congratulate me on my Arrival in *England*. I returned him Thanks, and introduced him to our Company; at the same Time telling him I was
 sorry

sorry so to forget my Obligations, as not even to have the Pleasure to recollect his Face. Madam Rich who heard his Voice from the next Room, and what had passed, with *Serena* and *Louisa*, none being present but those who were in the Secret of her being alive, pressing towards him, cried, Ah ! Col. *Williams* ! how lucky we are to see you here ! This Name and the Compliment that passed between them, gave me to understand that it was that generous Gentleman *Louisa* had mentioned with so much Distinction ; nor was I mistaken ; but he was so surprized to see my Adorable, that for some Time, he could hardly recover himself, till, being let into the Heads of our Adventures, he broke forth into Congratulations upon our Happiness ; and we persuaded him to stay with us, till our Marriages were performed, to which, with Joy, he consented. His Presence put us upon talking about the Squire, who now lived a brutish, sottish Life, at his little Estate at *Doncaster* : For my Part, I was so easy at present, that I seldom thought of him ; and when I did, 'twas not revengefully, but with absolute Pity and Contempt ; and we all agreed, that, if he remained quiet, 'twas not worth while to use him as he deserved, my Father concluding with the *Poet*,

'Tis Punishment enough to be a Villain !

*Now Morn, her rosy Steps in the Eastern Clime,
Advancing, strew'd the Earth with Orient Pearl !*

The Morn ! the gladsome Morn ! that was to make the lovely Cause of all my Cares and Pains for ever, ever, mine.—'Twas in the joyous Month of *May*, when Nature all around bloomed
odorous

odorous Sweets, that forth issued our blisful Brides, but chief my *Louisa*,

—*Dress'd in rich Array;
Fresh as the Month, and as the Morning fair;
Adown her Shoulders fell her Length of Hair:
Ribbands and Gems her braided Tresses bind,
The rest hung loose, and wanton'd in the Wind.*

A Gown of white Damask, richly embroidered, shaded her transporting Beauties, which received still greater Lustre by the Crimson Blushes that overspread her lovely Face; and her Eyes put to Shame the Clusters of Diamonds that were spread all over her Hair and Bosom! *Serena* and Miss *Bellair*, were as richly dressed; but *Fidele* had, with becoming Modesty, contrived to suit her Habit a little to her former Condition. We seized their willing, yet reluctant Hands; and, followed by our admiring Friends, and wondering Neighbours, proceeded to the Church, Sir *Walter*, at my Desire, having once more cast of his Mourning, and dressed himself in rich Clothes, suitable to the Occasion. *Louisa* put on her Masque, as soon as he appeared; which he wondering at, I told him I was forced to indulge her Modesty, by letting her be married thus veiled. He surveyed her Shape and Stature, as we walked along, and, fetching a sad Sigh, wiped his Eyes, endeavouring, however, to conceal his Emotion, under an Air of affected Gaiety. My Father joined our Hands in the holy Tye, and we were edified with the grave and truly apostolical Air, with which he performed the Sacred Ceremony. After it was over, Sir *Walter* insisting upon supplying the Marriage Feast, we adjourned to his House, where the whole

whole Neighbourhood was also invited ; and, just before we sat down to Dinner, my Father called him aside into a Room, where only *Louisa* and her Aunt, both still masqued, and he and myself were, and addressed himself thus : Sir *Walter*,—Providence orders all Things for the best ;—and this Day, by Means no one ever could think of, has made us all happy. —If these young Folks have exercised a little Stratagem with you, it was to encrease the Pleasure you would feel, I am sure, when, in my Son's Wife, in Mrs. *Thompson*, you will discover your long lost *Louisa* ; upon which she unmasked and we knelt before him, and entreated his Blessing. He was motionless some Time,——but soon discovered it was really his Daughter, and, without enquiring into the Affair, embraced us one after another, blessed us, and jumped and danced about in such a Manner, that any one would have thought him distracted. At length he resumed himself, and we shed Tears in Concert ; and my *Louisa* hung about his Neck, whilst he held her fast in his Arms, crying, every now and then,——'Tis she herself, and I am happy,——blessed for ever ;——and when his Sister discovered herself, and had informed him succinctly of all this wondrous Turn of Fortune, he was amazed, and told her he'd love her better than himself as long as he lived. Nothing but Joy reigned throughout the whole Vicinity : The House was full of Delight and Pleasure : ——Abroad every Green Swerd was exercised by the Gambols of our Country Lads and Lasses : And, *Louisa's* Return being noised Abroad, the Hearts of all that knew us ran over with Satisfaction. *Sbarpley* was preiented to Sir *Walter* as his Nephew, and he received him

him with the utmost Goodness,—blessed *Serena*, and was quite inebriated with his Felicity. You see, *Papa*, said my lovely Consort, I am as good as my Word, and have not only married with your Consent, but you have given me away with your own Hands : Yes, he replied, 'tis true, and, if I could, I'd give thee away an hundred Times over, to that worthy Youth, my dear *Joe* ! so make Haste, my Boy, and make me a Grandfather. I bowed, ——— *Louisa* blushed. Oh ! the delightful Moments I passed this Night, in the Arms of this adorable End of all my Wishes ; even luxuriant Fancy can't paint in Colours equal to the Truth ! Oh ! Life, how art thou improved, by a virtuous and lawful Intercourse with these delightful Companions, these soft, melting Recompensers of all our Pains and numerous Cares !

We were complimented next Morning by all our Friends, who spent a Fortnight more with us ; and they had the Pleasure to see Sir *Walter* pay me the 12,000 *l.* that was his Daughter's, and he made over the Estate in our Neighbourhood, of near 1000 *l. per Ann.* to us and our Heirs. Mr. *Goodwill* and his Lady repaired to their Country-house ; Mr. *Diaper* and Mrs. *Diaper*, with my Friend and his charming Spouse, went with Mr. *Bellair* and his Wife to their Seat, to spend some Time before they returned to *London* ; and *Sharpley*, with his dear *Serena*, and Col. *Williams*, accompanied Madam *Rich* to the Estate in *Somersetshire*, which they were to possess at her Death. *Prig* accompanied Mr. *Archer* the younger to *London* ; where he was going to settle, in the Profession of a Wine-merchant ; and our Adieus were sensibly touching to us all ; but as our Fortunes were
all

all considerable enough to visit each other in the most distant Parts we could settle in, we comforted ourselves with the Thoughts of frequently seeing each other again, and the Promise of corresponding constantly by Letter. Mr. *Archer* and Mr. *Sharpley*, each, set out with his Son, for some Months; so that now our Happiness was quite Domestic. *Truman* bought a pretty Estate in our Neighbourhood, where he happily still lives with our *Fidele*, and often visits us, still preserving that Modesty and Discretion that made every one love him. As to myself, I enjoy, my gentle Reader, in the Society of my charming Wife, all those Comforts and Solacements that give a Man a Relish, an earnest Desire of Life. Her Virtue, and her good Sense and Prudence, endear her to all the World; and I strive to act in such a Manner, as to preserve that Love and Esteem from her, that is the principal Ingredient in conjugal Felicity. My Father and Mother are still living, and behold in their Son the good Qualities, I flatter myself, that they early endeavoured to inspire; and are never easy a Day without the Sight of my charming *Louisa*. Sir *Walter* lives with us, and is hearty and well, and like to survive long enough to see his second Generation rise to Maturity; for already I have been blessed with two fine Children, a Boy and a Girl, who are the very Pictures of their angelic Mother. Our Correspondence with, and now and then the Sight of our dear Friends, adds greatly to our Happiness; and I reckon myself, at present, at the Summit of Human Felicity.

Thus, thro' a long and toilsome Pilgrimage of Woe, attended with few real Delights,

I have attained that settled State of pure, uncorrupted Bliss, that we are all, in different Routs, wandering after : And I hope my Papers, may happily fall into such proper Hands, as will improve by my Misfortunes ; and, by avoiding Vice and Folly, with all their attendant Iils, acquire the same Serenity that is at length my Happy Lot : And, as with my *Louisa*, I pursue a constant Course of Benevolence and Kindness to our Fellow-creatures, I hope, with *Dryden*,

We ever shall be blest'd——who live to bless.

F I N I S.



